

# Mucosal immunity in COPD

From mucociliary dysfunction to lymphoid follicles

Leen Seys

2016

Promotor: Prof. Dr. Guy Brusselle

Co-promotor: Prof. Dr. Ken Bracke

Thesis submitted to fulfil the requirements for the degree of  
“Doctor in Health Sciences”

© Leen Seys, 2016

All rights reserved. No part of this thesis may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system or transmitted in any form or by any means, without permission from the author, or when appropriate from the publishers of the publications.

Financial support: the Concerted Research Action of the Ghent University (BOF/GOA, 01G02714), the Fund for Scientific Research in Flanders (FWO Vlaanderen, G.0897.12N) and the Interuniversity Attraction Poles program (IUAP, P7/30).

ISBN: 978-94-6197-462-4

Department of Respiratory Medicine

Laboratory for Translational Research in Obstructive Pulmonary Diseases

Ghent University Hospital

De Pintelaan 185

9000 Ghent

BELGIUM

## LIST OF PUBLICATIONS

This manuscript is based on the following publications:

CHAPTER 4 is based on:

Polverino F\*, **Seys LJ\***, Bracke KR, Owen CA. B Cells in Chronic Obstructive Pulmonary Disease: Moving to Center Stage. *Am J Physiol Lung Cell Mol Physiol* 2016; 311: L687-L695. (\* equal contribution)

IF: 4.721/ Ranking in Respiratory System: 8/58

CHAPTER 7

**Seys LJ**, Verhamme FM, Dupont LL, Desauter E, Duerr J, Seyhan Agircan A, Conickx G, Joos GF, Brusselle GG, Mall MA, Bracke KR. Airway Surface Dehydration Aggravates Cigarette Smoke-Induced Hallmarks of COPD in Mice. *PLoS one* 2015; 10: e0129897.

IF: 3.057 / Ranking in Multidisciplinary sciences: 11/63

CHAPTER 8

Lies Lahousse, **Leen J.M. Seys**, Guy F. Joos, RS-PI, Bruno H. Stricker, Guy G. Brusselle. Epidemiology and impact of Chronic Bronchitis in COPD.

Manuscript in preparation

CHAPTER 9

**Seys LJ**, Verhamme FM, Schinwald A, Hammad H, Cunoosamy DM, Bantsimba-Malanda C, Sabirsh A, McCall E, Flavell L, Herbst R, Provoost S, Lambrecht BN, Joos GF, Brusselle GG, Bracke KR. Role of B Cell-Activating Factor in Chronic Obstructive Pulmonary Disease. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2015; 192: 706-718.

IF: 13.118 / Ranking in Respiratory System: 2/58

## TABLE OF CONTENTS

ABBREVIATIONS.....	6
ABSTRACT .....	7
PART I: Introduction .....	9
chapter 1: Chronic Obstructive Pulmonary Disease.....	9
1.1 Definition .....	10
1.2 Epidemiology and burden of disease .....	11
1.3 Clinical manifestations of COPD and Diagnosis.....	12
1.4 Pathology.....	15
1.5 Pathogenesis .....	17
1.6 Treatment.....	23
chapter 2: Mucociliary clearance in COPD .....	25
2.1 Mucociliary clearance: introduction.....	26
2.2 Mucociliary clearance in health.....	26
2.3 Mucociliary clearance in COPD.....	30
2.4 Beta-ENaC transgenic mice: a murine model of airway surface dehydration .....	34
chapter 3: The chronic bronchitis phenotype in COPD .....	37
3.1 Definition .....	38
3.2 Epidemiology .....	38
3.3 Clinical manifestations and impact of chronic bronchitis in COPD .....	39
3.4 Treatment.....	40
3.5 Overview of epidemiological studies .....	41
chapter 4: B cells, ectopic lymphoid follicles and B cell-activating factor in COPD .....	43
4.1 B cells, ectopic lymphoid follicles and B cell-activating factor: introduction.....	44
4.2 B cells, ectopic lymphoid follicles and B cell-activating factor in COPD.....	49
4.3 Function of B cells, ectopic lymphoid follicles and B cell-activating factor in COPD.....	53
Chapter 5: Translational research in COPD: methods.....	55
5.1 Translational research in COPD .....	56
5.2 Murine model of COPD .....	57
5.3 Human studies.....	63
5.4 The Rotterdam Study .....	64

PART II: Research work.....	65
Chapter 6: Research Objectives .....	65
Chapter 7: Airway surface dehydration aggravates cigarette smoke-induced .....	69
hallmarks of COPD in mice .....	69
Chapter 8: Epidemiology and impact of chronic bronchitis in COPD .....	89
Chapter 9: Role of B cell-Activating Factor in Chronic Obstructive Pulmonary Disease .....	103
Chapter 10: Discussion and future perspectives.....	127
10.1    Role of mucus dysfunction in COPD .....	128
10.2    B cell rich lymphoid follicles in COPD .....	133
10.3    General conclusion .....	136
Chapter 11: Summary / Samenvatting .....	139
SUMMARY .....	140
SAMENVATTING .....	141
 PART III: ADDENDUM .....	 143
REFERENCES .....	144
CURRICULUM VITAE .....	164
DANKWOORD .....	168

## ABBREVIATIONS

ASL	airway surface liquid
ATP	adenosine triphosphate
BAFF	B cell-activating factor
BAFFR	B cell-activating factor receptor
BAL	Bronchoalveolar lavage
BCMA	B cell maturation antigen
BCR	B cell receptor
CB	chronic bronchitis
CD	cluster of differentiation
CF	cystic fibrosis
CFTR	cystic fibrosis transmembrane conductance regulator
COPD	chronic obstructive pulmonary disease
CS	cigarette smoke
DAMP	damage associated molecular pattern
DC	dendritic cell
DI	destructive index
ENaC	epithelial sodium channel
FDC	follicular dendritic cell
FEV <sub>1</sub>	forced expiratory capacity in one second
FVC	forced vital capacity
GOLD	global initiative for obstructive lung diseases
FRC	fibroblastic reticular cell
GWAS	genome wide association study
Ig	immunoglobulin
IL	interleukin
ILC	innate lymphoid cells
Lm	mean linear intercept
MHC	major histocompatibility complex
MLN	mediastinal lymph nodes
MMP	matrix metalloproteinase
MUC	mucin
PCL	periciliary layer
qRT-PCR	quantitative real time polymerase chain reaction
ROI	reactive oxygen intermediate
SLE	systemic lupus erythematosus
SLO	secondary lymphoid organ
SPLUNC	short palate and lung and nasal epithelial clone 1
TACI	transmembrane activator and cyclophilin ligand interactor
Tfh	T follicular helper cell
Th	T helper cell

## ABSTRACT

Chronic Obstructive Pulmonary Disease (COPD) is a highly prevalent disease which is characterized by an abnormal inflammation and destruction of lung tissue in response to noxious particles and gases, mainly cigarette smoke (CS). The pathogenesis of COPD is still not fully unravelled, which hampers the search for therapies that stop the progression of the disease.

In this thesis, we aimed to investigate 2 aspects of the mucosal immune response to CS: airway surface liquid dehydration and the formation of B cell-rich lymphoid follicles.

First, we studied the effect of airway surface liquid dehydration on CS-induced pathology in mice. Dehydration of the airway surface causes mucociliary clearance dysfunction and leads clinically to chronic bronchitis. Airway surface liquid dehydration was mimicked in mice which overexpress the  $\beta$ -subunit of the Epithelial Sodium Channel (ENaC). We subjected  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice to CS for 4 and 8 weeks and observed that airway surface dehydration aggravates CS-induced inflammation and alveolar destruction. Furthermore, following 8 weeks of CS exposure,  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice already started to develop lymphoid aggregations whereas wild-type mice did not. This suggests that dysfunction of mucociliary clearance can induce or accelerate the adaptive immune response to CS.

Next, we investigated the effect of chronic bronchitis on clinically important outcomes in patients with COPD in a large population-based cohort. We observed that the presence of chronic bronchitis in patients with COPD leads to an increased risk for being a frequent exacerbator and increases the risk of mortality. This demonstrates the importance of the symptom chronic bronchitis and consequently, the importance of a well-functioning mucociliary clearance system.

Inadequate mucociliary clearance may contribute to the chronic inflammation and lymphoid follicle formation seen in COPD. It has been demonstrated that the number of airways with lymphoid follicles is associated with disease severity. In addition, the expression of B cell-Activating Factor (BAFF) in these lymphoid follicles in patients with COPD is also correlated with disease severity. Therefore, we aimed to investigate the role of BAFF and B cell-rich lymphoid follicles in COPD. We localized BAFF expression in lymphoid follicles of patients with COPD and antagonized BAFF in mice which were chronically exposed to CS. We demonstrated that BAFF is significantly increased in lungs of patients with COPD and is present around both immune and stromal cells within lymphoid follicles. Furthermore, antagonizing BAFF in CS-exposed mice attenuates pulmonary inflammation and alveolar destruction.

The results shown in this thesis underline the importance of the mucosal immune response in the pathogenesis of COPD.





## PART I: INTRODUCTION

### CHAPTER 1: CHRONIC OBSTRUCTIVE PULMONARY DISEASE

## 1.1 DEFINITION

Although Chronic Obstructive Pulmonary Disease (COPD) is the third leading cause of death worldwide and a major cause of morbidity, the term 'COPD' is not well known by the lay public <sup>1, 2</sup>. However, the association of shortness of breath – the main symptom of the disease – and cigarette smoking does sound familiar to many people.

The definition of the disease is formulated as follows by the Global initiative for chronic Obstructive Lung Disease (GOLD) <sup>3</sup> :

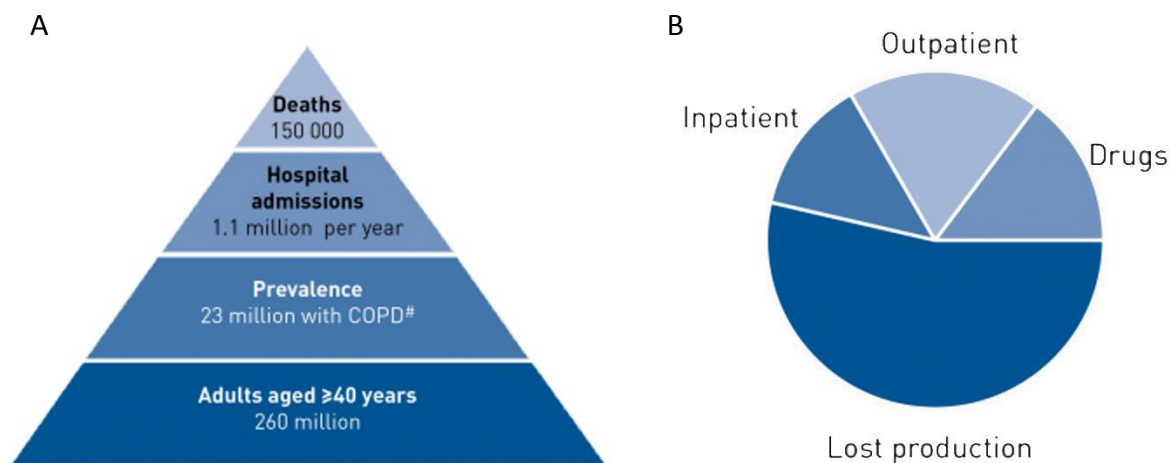
*“Chronic Obstructive Pulmonary Disease (COPD) is a common preventable and treatable disease, characterized by persistent airflow limitation that is usually progressive and associated with an enhanced chronic inflammatory response in the airways and the lung to noxious particles or gases. Exacerbations and comorbidities contribute to the overall severity in individual patients.”*

The noxious particles and gases mentioned in the definition originate from cigarette smoking, occupational exposure to harmful gases and particulate matter and exposure to in- and outdoor pollution <sup>2, 4, 5</sup>. COPD develops after cumulative exposures to these injurious substances over decades, but only in susceptible individuals <sup>2, 3</sup>. It is estimated that at least 20% of all smokers develop COPD <sup>4, 6</sup>. Several large-scale studies have demonstrated that genetic variation accounts for differences in susceptibility <sup>7-10</sup>. Other contributing factors are intra-uterine growth retardation and low birth weight, history of pulmonary infections during childhood, history of pulmonary tuberculosis, chronic asthma, poor nourishment, poor socio-economic status and importantly, aging <sup>5, 11, 12</sup>. Some of these additional risk factors may in turn be genetically and epigenetically regulated <sup>10, 13</sup>.

In most patients, COPD is progressive, leading to severe disability. The only intervention that slows down the progression of the disease, is the removal of initiating factors, for instance smoking cessation. However, even after smoking cessation, the disease persists <sup>4</sup>. Treatments are mainly focussed on symptom relief <sup>2</sup>. Currently, there is no cure. Further investigation into the pathogenesis of this disabling disease will advance the search for better therapies <sup>14, 15</sup>.

## 1.2 EPIDEMIOLOGY AND BURDEN OF DISEASE

The global burden of COPD is substantial. The World Health Organisation (WHO) states that COPD is the third leading cause of death, responsible for approximately 3.1 million deaths worldwide in 2012 <sup>1</sup>. In Europe, around 2010, COPD was the cause of death of approximately 0.15 million people (**Figure 1**). In addition, an average of 1690 thousand disability-adjusted-life-years and a total economic cost of 141.4 billion euros per year can be accounted to this disease (**Figure 1**) <sup>16</sup>.



**Figure 1: The burden of COPD.** A) Burden of COPD in older adults in Europe around 2010. B) Distribution of economic costs per category for COPD in Europe. #: Global Initiative for Chronic Obstructive Lung Diseases stage II-IV. Figure adapted from The European Lung White Book Respiratory Health and Disease in Europe. Published 2013, ISBN 978-1-84984-042-2 <sup>16</sup>.

Worldwide, approximately 1 billion people smoke tobacco and 3 billion people are exposed to smoke from biomass fuel <sup>5, 17</sup>. In addition, numerous people are exposed to air pollution or occupational hazardous substances, increasing the number of people at risk even further.

It is estimated that 9 - 10 % of the global population aged 40 years or older suffers from moderate to very severe COPD <sup>15</sup>. Afonso and colleagues studied the same age-group in the Netherlands and reported a prevalence of 3 % of physician-diagnosed COPD and the incidence of physician-diagnosed COPD was 2.92/1000 person-years <sup>18</sup>.

Although it is generally assumed that in Western Countries cigarette smoking is the most important cause of COPD, the prevalence in never-smokers in the USA is estimated at 6.6%, resulting in a quarter of COPD patients being never-smokers <sup>19</sup>. This has been corroborated by studies in the UK and Spain <sup>5</sup>.

### 1.3 CLINICAL MANIFESTATIONS OF COPD AND DIAGNOSIS

#### 1.3.1 MAIN SYMPTOMS AND DIAGNOSIS

Gradually progressing and persistent breathlessness is the main symptom of COPD. This may be accompanied by cough and/or sputum of varying severity <sup>2,3</sup>.

The diagnosis of COPD is based on anamnesis - in particular exposure to cigarette smoke (CS) and other risk factors - and symptoms of dyspnea, cough and sputum and requires spirometry to confirm <sup>2</sup>. Spirometry is a lung function test which measures, among other values, the forced expiratory volume in 1 second (FEV<sub>1</sub>) and the forced vital capacity (FVC). A ratio of FEV<sub>1</sub>/FVC < 0.70 determines the presence of airflow limitation according to GOLD standards, whereas a FEV<sub>1</sub>/FVC < lower limit of normal is required for diagnosing COPD according to the Global Lung function Initiative. If the airflow limitation persists after inhalation of a bronchodilator (usually salbutamol), the diagnosis of COPD can be made. Disease severity is currently assessed based on the degree to which the FEV<sub>1</sub> is different from the predicted value for a person of that specific age, height and weight (**Table 1**). Recently, new guidelines are published which take in account airflow limitation as well as symptoms (based on the COPD Assessment Test or the Modified Medical Research Council Dyspnea Scale) and exacerbation risk. Based on these 3 criteria patients are divided into 4 groups, A to D) <sup>3</sup>. Additional tests include measurements of diffusing capacity of the lungs and computed tomography (CT) which contribute to the assessment of lung function and severity of emphysema.

GOLD STAGE	COPD	FEV <sub>1</sub> /FVC		FEV <sub>1</sub>
GOLD I	Mild	< 0.70	and	≥ 80 % predicted
GOLD II	Moderate	< 0.70	and	50 % ≤ FEV <sub>1</sub> < 80% predicted
GOLD III	Severe	< 0.70	and	30 % ≤ FEV <sub>1</sub> < 50 % predicted
GOLD IV	Very severe	< 0.70	and	< 30% predicted

**Table 1:** COPD classification according to the Global Initiative for Chronic Obstructive Lung diseases (GOLD)

Adapted from Vestbo J. *et al.*, *Am J of Respir Crit Care Med* 2013;187(4):347-365 <sup>2</sup>.

#### 1.3.2 COPD PHENOTYPES

The heterogeneity in clinical presentation and progression of COPD is substantial. Furthermore, the response to therapy is highly variable. This has led to subdividing patients according to similar traits or similar response to therapy in so called 'phenotypes' <sup>20</sup>. Since phenotyping can be a rather confusing term,

Meilan Han and colleagues proposed to define a COPD phenotype as: *“a single or combination of disease attributes that describe differences between individuals with COPD as they relate to clinically meaningful outcomes (symptoms, exacerbations, response to therapy, rate of disease progression, or death)”*<sup>21</sup>. Several phenotypes have been proposed (**Table 2**), however, only four are validated:  $\alpha$ 1 anti-trypsin deficiency, frequent exacerbators, emphysema and chronic bronchitis<sup>14</sup>.

Proposed COPD phenotypes
$\alpha$ 1-antitrypsin deficiency
Frequent exacerbators
Emphysema
Chronic Bronchitis
Severe hypoxia
Disproportionate symptoms
Persistent systemic inflammation
Chronic airway bacterial colonisation
Asthma/COPD overlap syndrome
Early severe airflow limitation
Extreme pulmonary hypertension
COPD in never-smokers
The 4 patientgroups proposed by GOLD

**Table 2:** Proposed COPD phenotypes.

Based on Celli B. et al. An official American Thoracic Society/European Respiratory Society statement: research questions in COPD. *Eur Respir J* 2015; 45: 879-905<sup>14</sup>.

The monogenic disorder  $\alpha$ 1 anti-trypsin deficiency is an autosomal recessive inherited defect in the *SERPINEA1* gene. The product of this gene is a serine protease inhibitor which neutralizes proteases such as neutrophil elastase. It affects approximately 1 in 2000-5000 persons in Europe<sup>16, 22</sup>. Pulmonary pathology is characterized by severe early-onset emphysema and is often accompanied by liver disease<sup>22, 23</sup>.

An exacerbation of COPD is defined as *“an event in the natural course of the disease characterized by a change in the patient’s baseline dyspnea, cough, and/or sputum that is beyond normal day-to-day variations, is acute in onset, and may warrant a change in regular medication in a patient with underlying COPD”*. Exacerbations can be elicited by respiratory infections and increased environmental pollution. Patients with 2 or more exacerbations per year have a worse quality of life and an accelerated lung function decline<sup>24-26</sup>.

The emphysema phenotype has been known as the ‘pink puffer’ phenotype and is associated with significant dyspnea, hyperinflation and weight loss, but with adequate oxygenation<sup>27</sup>. One subgroup, patients with severe upper lobe emphysema and low exercise capacity at baseline, are a separate phenotype based on a survival advantage after lung-volume-reduction surgery compared to patients with severe emphysema with another craniocaudal distribution or with high exercise capacity at baseline<sup>28</sup>.

The chronic bronchitis phenotype will be thoroughly discussed in **Chapter 3**.

Other phenotypes may exist but need to be validated. Importantly, patients can also express more than one phenotype<sup>29, 30</sup>.

### *1.3.3 SYSTEMIC MANIFESTATIONS AND CO-MORBIDITIES*

Pulmonary symptoms in patients with COPD are often accompanied by systemic effects and comorbidities<sup>14, 15, 31, 32</sup>. It is hypothesized that systemic effects occur due to 'spill-over' of pulmonary inflammatory mediators into the systemic circulation. However, other factors such as smoking, aging and physical inactivity may also contribute<sup>4, 33</sup>. In stable COPD and even more so during exacerbations, increased levels of cytokines, chemokines, acute phase proteins and leukocytes are measured<sup>33</sup>. Alongside systemic inflammation, the compromised gas exchange also has systemic consequences. Cachexia and skeletal muscle wasting are common systemic manifestations in patients with COPD. Comorbidities include cardiovascular disease, diabetes, depression, normocytic anemia and importantly, lung cancer<sup>2, 31, 33</sup>. Furthermore, in the Rotterdam Study – a large population-based cohort study of subjects aged 45 years or older – COPD was found to be associated with sudden cardiac death, carotid artery wall thickening, stroke and frailty<sup>34-37</sup>.

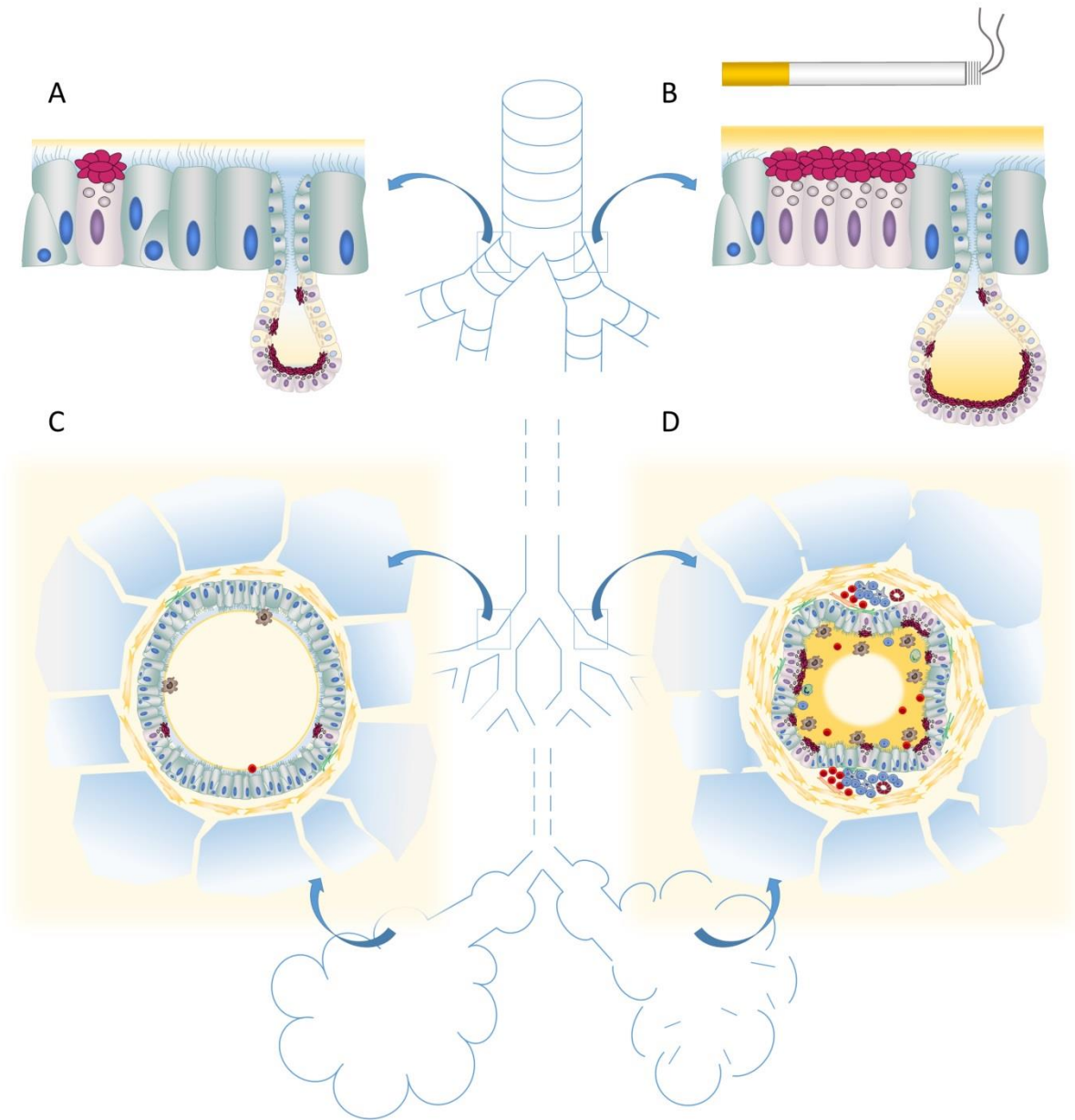
## 1.4 PATHOLOGY

The pathological changes underlying the symptoms in patients with COPD are chronic bronchitis, obstructive bronchiolitis and emphysema (**Figure 2**)<sup>7, 38</sup>. Vascular remodelling, both in the pulmonary compartment and systemically, is also a pathological feature of the disease<sup>39</sup>.

The chronically inflamed large airways (> 4 mm in internal diameter) are subjected to goblet cell metaplasia and enlargement of the submucosal glands, resulting in excessive mucus production<sup>38</sup>. The structure and function of the epithelial cilia that propel the mucus towards the larynx are compromised by CS<sup>40-42</sup>. Further contributing to impairment of mucociliary clearance, is the detrimental effect of CS on epithelial ion channels that regulate the hydration of the mucus layer<sup>40</sup>. Finally, infiltration of inflammatory cells in the subepithelial area and deposition of connective tissue in the bronchial walls further adds to the pathological feature of chronic bronchitis<sup>38, 43</sup>.

The constant supply of noxious gases and particles inflicts inflammation in the small airways (< 2 mm in internal diameter) as well. The inflammatory infiltrate is characterized by neutrophils, macrophages, B and T lymphocytes<sup>44</sup>. Chronic inflammation induces goblet cell metaplasia and mucus plugging<sup>45</sup>. The resistance in the small airways is further increased by smooth muscle hypertrophy and peribronchiolar fibrosis<sup>38</sup>. Finally, in severe COPD, lymphoid follicles contribute to an increased resistance by increasing the wall thickness<sup>38, 44</sup>. The end result is obstructive bronchiolitis and air trapping.

Products of the inflammatory response to CS, such as proteases, break down lung tissue<sup>43</sup>. Subsequently, repair and remodelling processes are initiated. The result of this cascade is destruction of terminal and respiratory bronchioli, leading to centrilobular lesions and emphysema<sup>46</sup>. Loss of terminal bronchioli precedes emphysematous damage which is characterized by destruction of alveolar walls leading to bullous lesions<sup>46, 47</sup>. Emphysema can also be generated through increased apoptosis<sup>48</sup>. The outcome is loss of elastic recoil and static hyperinflation.



**Figure 2: COPD pathology:** A) Healthy large airway. B) Large airway of a patient with COPD: goblet cell metaplasia and submucosal gland hypertrophy, resulting in a thick mucus layer. C) Healthy small airway and alveoli. D) Small airway and alveoli of a patient with COPD: a thick mucus layer and infiltration of inflammatory cells in the airway lumen, goblet cell metaplasia, lymphoid follicle formation, subepithelial fibrosis and destruction of alveolar walls (emphysema).



## 1.5 PATHOGENESIS

Lung inflammation is present in all smokers. However, not all smokers develop COPD. In those who do, the inflammatory response is abnormal. The difference in response to tobacco smoke can be contributed to genetic variations and early-life lung development<sup>15, 49, 50</sup>.

Since COPD is generally caused by CS in Western Countries, the pathogenesis of CS-induced COPD will be described. Importantly, CS is a mixture of thousands of toxic particles and fumes. It is estimated that each cigarette puff contains over 2000 xenobiotic compounds and  $10^{14}$  free radicals<sup>51, 52</sup>.

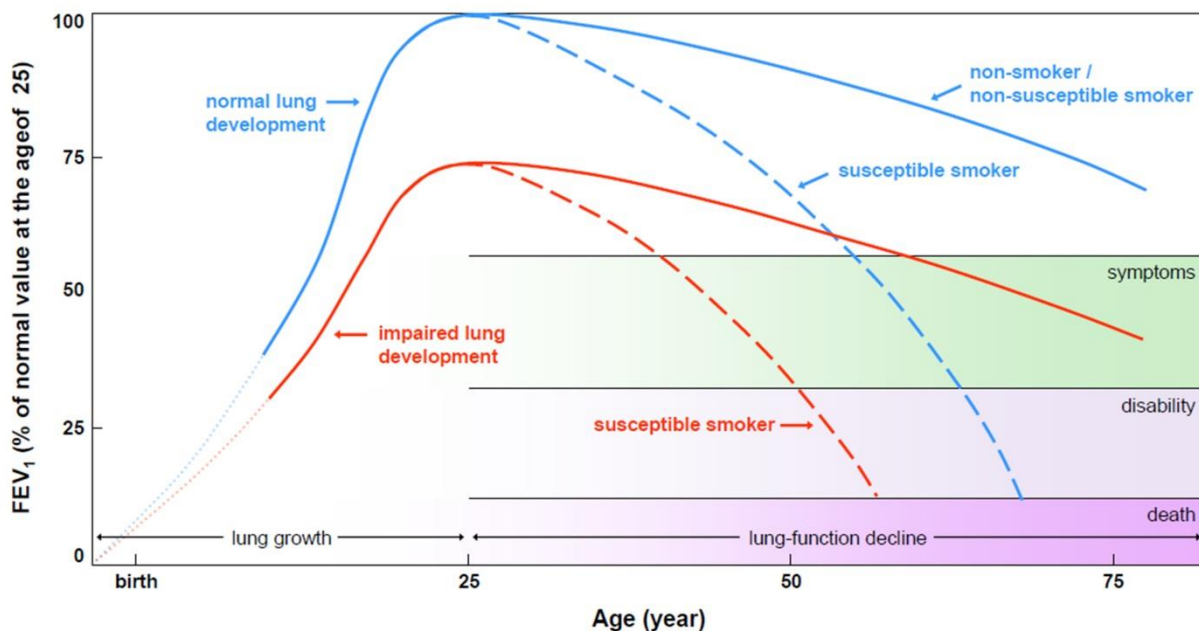
### 1.5.1 GENETICS

Twin-studies have suggested a strong genetic component in the risk of developing COPD<sup>53</sup> and several Genome Wide Association Studies (GWAS) have identified genetic variants associated with lung function or risk of developing COPD<sup>8, 9</sup>. Hunninghake *et al.* have demonstrated that the minor allele of a single nucleotide polymorphism in the gene encoding for MMP12 reduced the risk of developing COPD, and more importantly, showed that the outcome of this genetic variation altered with different environments<sup>54, 55</sup>. Moreover, genome-wide studies also reveal genetic variations at the base of smoking behavior<sup>56, 57</sup>. Recently, the UK BiLEVE study demonstrated variability in the underlying genetic framework of both smoking behavior and lung health<sup>10</sup>. Nevertheless, these variations only account for a small part of the phenotypic differences<sup>8, 10</sup>. In the last decade, the importance of epigenetic modulation has become apparent. Several microRNAs have already been described in association with COPD<sup>10, 13, 58</sup>. And evidence linking other epigenetic mechanisms (long non-coding RNAs, DNA methylation and histone modifications) to the pathogenesis of COPD is rapidly emerging<sup>10, 13, 59</sup>.

### 1.5.2 EARLY-LIFE LUNG DEVELOPMENT

Although the importance of early-life lung development has been emphasised by paediatricians and was already implied by Fletcher and Peto in the 1970s<sup>49, 60</sup>, only fairly recent this issue has caught a spotlight in COPD research. The crucial years to be able to reach the maximal lung function in young adulthood, are the first 4 to 6 years of life<sup>61</sup>. Even compromised lung development *in utero* – for instance due to maternal smoking during pregnancy - increases the risk for reduced lung function in adulthood<sup>11, 50, 61</sup>. Other ‘childhood disadvantage factors’, such as maternal asthma, paternal asthma, childhood asthma and childhood respiratory infections, also contribute to an impaired lung function in adulthood and significantly increase the risk of developing COPD<sup>50, 61, 62</sup>. The effect of having 2 or more early-life

disadvantages is estimated to be as important as heavy smoking for development of COPD <sup>50</sup>. Recently, a large-scale study in 3 independent cohorts has confirmed that half of the patients with COPD displayed a low FEV<sub>1</sub> in early adulthood and a subsequent moderate decline instead of the usual trajectory of a rapid decline in FEV<sub>1</sub> starting from a normal lung capacity (**Figure 3**) <sup>63</sup>.



**Figure 3: Adapted Fletcher and Peto Curve.** The effect of impaired lung development and genetic susceptibility on lung function decline. Adapted from Brusselle GG., *N Engl J Med*, 2009;361(27):2664-2665 <sup>55</sup>.

### 1.5.3 ABNORMAL INFLAMMATORY RESPONSE TO CIGARETTE SMOKE IN COPD

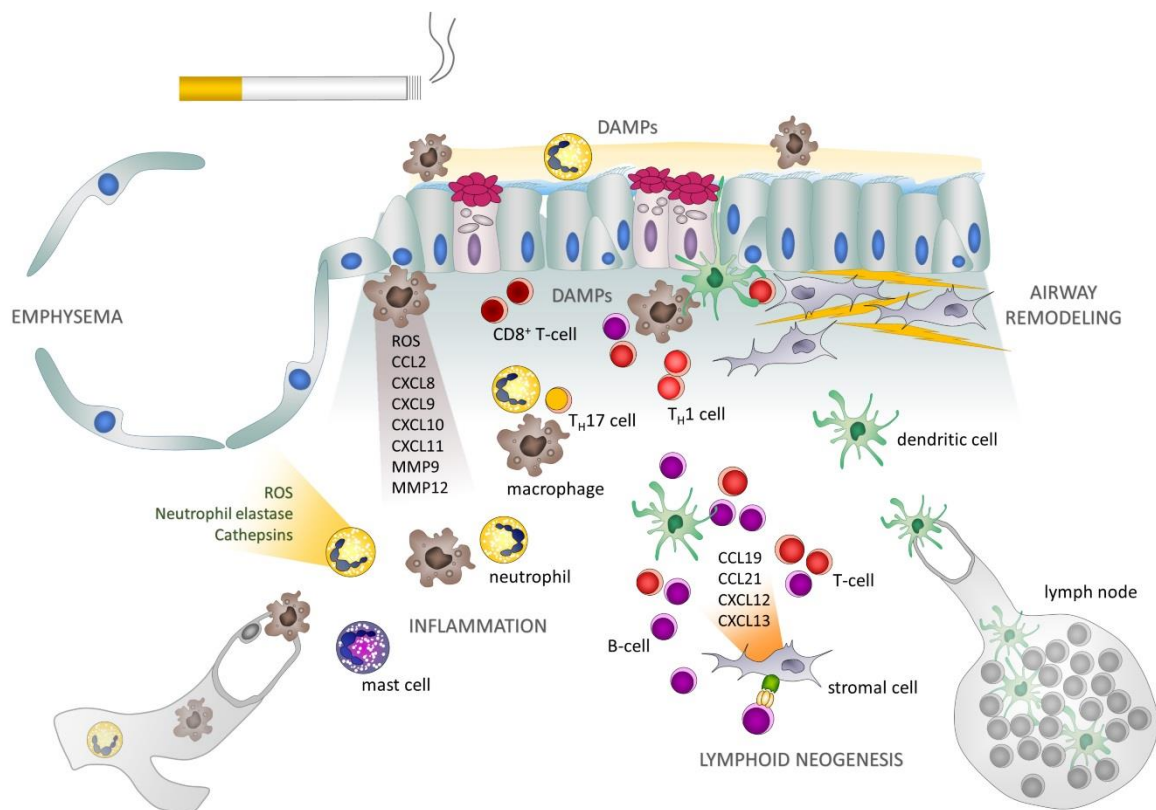
Damage to airway epithelial cells is key in the initiation of pulmonary inflammation (**Figure 4**) <sup>64, 65</sup>. The multitude of toxic substances in CS injure the epithelium directly or by inducing oxidative stress and tissue hypoxia, leading to cell death and release of damage-associated molecular patterns (DAMPs) <sup>4, 52, 66-68</sup>. In addition, CS exposure induces the release of DAMPs by macrophages and neutrophils as well <sup>69, 70</sup>. In broncho-alveolar lavage (BAL) fluid of patients with COPD, there is an increased concentration of DAMPs, such as high-mobility group box 1(HMGB1) and extra-cellular ATP, compared to controls <sup>69, 71</sup>. DAMPs are recognised by pattern recognition receptors on innate immune cells and structural cells <sup>4, 51</sup>. In response to the release of DAMPs, airway epithelial cells and immune cells secrete an array of cytokines, chemokines and growth factors <sup>4, 72</sup>. As result, the capillary endothelium is activated to allow leukocyte adhesion and migration <sup>73</sup> and leukocytes are attracted to the site of injury <sup>4, 38, 51, 68</sup>.

In response to the chemoattractant CXCL8, neutrophils infiltrate the airway lumen<sup>68, 74</sup>, the bronchial wall and submucosal glands<sup>44, 75, 76</sup> and airway smooth muscle bundles<sup>77</sup>. The substantial increase in neutrophils is associated with airflow limitation and peripheral airway dysfunction in patients with COPD<sup>75, 78</sup>. In accordance, neutrophil-derived products are consistently shown to be elevated in airways of patients with COPD compared to controls and correlate with disease severity<sup>79, 80</sup>. Neutrophils and their derivatives are implicated in several pathogenic mechanisms leading to COPD. First, they release a wide range of pro- and anti-inflammatory cytokines, chemokines and growth factors contributing to the activation and regulation of the immune response<sup>81</sup>. Second, neutrophils produce a variety of proteases. Neutrophil elastase, cathapsin-G, proteinase-3 and neutrophil-produced matrix metalloproteases (MMP) are important factors in degradation of tissue, propagating the development of emphysema<sup>4, 82, 83</sup>. Third, neutrophils are a major source of reactive oxygen intermediates (ROI), thus contributing to oxidative stress and tissue damage – directly and indirectly by inactivating anti-proteases<sup>81, 84</sup>. Fourth, in COPD, the phagocytic activity of neutrophils is impaired leading to accumulation of apoptotic cells and secondary necrosis with release of danger signals<sup>85</sup>. Fifth, neutrophils play a significant role in the overproduction of mucins at least in part through its product neutrophil elastase<sup>83</sup>. And finally, neutrophils also produce neutrophil extracellular traps - fibrillary networks composed from nuclear material and pattern recognition molecules, such as pentraxin-3. These neutrophil extracellular traps are intended to work as a mesh to capture pathogens<sup>81</sup>. However, both pentraxin-3 and neutrophil extracellular traps have been associated with COPD<sup>86-88</sup>.

In the pathogenesis of COPD, macrophages play a pivotal role as well. Alveolar macrophages are present in homeostatic circumstances, but their numbers increase significantly upon CS exposure both through local proliferation and attraction of monocytes from the peripheral blood<sup>89, 90</sup>. Interstitial macrophages, a second tissue-resident macrophage population, reside in the lung parenchyma and represent less than 10% of the lung macrophages<sup>90, 91</sup>. The inflammatory response is characterised by a 5- to 10-fold increase in macrophages in airways, lung parenchyma, BAL and sputum of patients with COPD compared to controls<sup>4, 38, 44, 75, 83</sup>. The severity of COPD is positively correlated with macrophage numbers<sup>75, 92</sup>. Furthermore, depletion of macrophages in a short-term mouse model of COPD resulted in protection against the development of COPD-like pathology, underlining their crucial role in the disease<sup>93</sup>. The release of anti- and pro-inflammatory cytokines, chemokines and growth factors, ROI and several proteases – including MMP2, MMP9, MMP12 and cathepsins K, L and S – by macrophages drives several elements in the pathogenesis of COPD<sup>52, 83, 90</sup>. Importantly, macrophages are also impaired in their ability to phagocytose apoptotic cells, resulting in secondary necrosis and amplification of inflammation<sup>89, 94</sup>. Alveolar

macrophages exhibit an enormous plasticity to adapt to the ever changing microenvironment in the airways and alveoli. Exposure to CS drives the development of both pro-inflammatory (M1) macrophages and anti-inflammatory (M2) macrophages<sup>90, 95</sup>. However, transcriptional profiling revealed a downregulation of M1-associated genes and an induction of M2-associated genes involved in immunoregulation and tissue remodelling<sup>96</sup>.

Alongside increased numbers of macrophages and neutrophils, other innate immune cells infiltrate the lungs and airways of patients with COPD. Increased numbers of natural killer cells have been associated with disease severity<sup>75</sup>. Mast cells are significantly increased in airway tissues of patients with COPD, especially in patients with centrilobular emphysema<sup>65,97</sup>. Interestingly, innate lymphoid cells type 3 (ILC3) and more specifically, the natural cytotoxicity receptor-negative ILC3, tend to be increased in patients with COPD<sup>98</sup>.



**Figure 4: COPD pathogenesis.** Cigarette smoke damages airway epithelial cells and alveolar macrophages which release damage associated molecular patterns (DAMPs). Subsequently, inflammatory cells are attracted to the airways and dendritic cells migrate to the draining lymph nodes. In chronic inflammation, constant release of proteases by the inflammatory cells causes alveolar wall destruction. In addition, mucus plugging, airway wall remodeling and the formation of lymphoid follicles contribute to the small airway obstruction.

At the crossroad between innate and adaptive immunity, dendritic cells (DC) play a crucial role in the immune response to CS. Following encounter with an immunogenic antigen, these antigen presenting cells migrate towards the draining lymph nodes and display antigen in the T cell-rich zone. Langerin+ DCs accumulate in small airways of patients with COPD and their increase is associated with disease severity<sup>99</sup>. Furthermore, increased expression of costimulatory molecules on several DC subsets is correlated with disease severity as well<sup>100</sup>.

Where innate immunity is essential in the initiation phase of the immune response to CS, the adaptive immune system is important in the progression and consolidation phases of the COPD pathogenesis<sup>51</sup>. Following antigen presentation by DCs, T cells are activated and recruited to the lung through binding of the chemoattractant CXCL10 – produced by structural cells in the lung – to its receptor CXCR3 on activated T cells<sup>51, 101</sup>. Characteristic for airways and lungs of patients with COPD are increased numbers of CD8+ cytotoxic T cells which correlate with disease severity<sup>102, 103</sup>. Importantly, CD8+ T cells in patients with COPD possess enhanced cytotoxicity compared to healthy smokers and non-smokers<sup>104</sup>. In contrast to CD8+ cells which recognise antigen presented by major histocompatibility class 1 (MHC I) molecules on most cells, CD4+ T cells require antigen presented by MHC II on professional antigen-presenting cells. These cells are not cytotoxic themselves, but exert their function through release of cytokines which guide the responses of other cells. The percentage of airways containing CD4+ T cells significantly increases with COPD severity<sup>44</sup>. However, this increase does not necessarily result in an increased immunological protection since the Th1 response to gram-negative bacteria is impaired in COPD<sup>105</sup>. Th17 cells, which are important in immunological responses against extracellular pathogens and in auto-immune responses, are increased in bronchial mucosa and peripheral blood of patients with COPD<sup>106, 107</sup>. Interestingly, recent evidence shows that IL-17, which is primarily produced by Th17 cells, seems to be implicated in the pathogenesis of COPD<sup>108, 109</sup>.

In the last decade, B cells have gained importance in the pathogenesis of COPD. Although the increase in B cells in patients with COPD was already reported in the early nineties, it was not until the landmark paper of Hogg *et al.* that interest in this cell type rekindled<sup>44, 110</sup>. Not only isolated B cells are more numerous, B cells are the main cell type of tertiary lymphoid follicles and the percentage of airways associated with lymphoid follicles is significantly higher in patients with severe COPD compared to non-COPD control subjects and patients in the earlier stages of the disease<sup>44</sup>. B cells, lymphoid follicles and their importance in the pathogenesis of COPD will be further discussed in **Chapter 4**.

#### 1.5.4 MECHANISMS DRIVING THE PATHOGENESIS OF COPD

Central in the pathogenesis of COPD is an excess of oxidants, both from exogenous and endogenous origin, which exceeds the amount of anti-oxidants present <sup>84</sup>. Endogenous oxidants derive from innate immune cells and airway epithelial cells following injury. Markers for oxidative stress have been detected in exhaled breath condensate of patients with COPD and increase further during exacerbations <sup>111</sup>. Increase in several oxidative stress markers is correlated with lung function decline in COPD <sup>84</sup>. Oxidative stress contributes to many of the pathogenic events in COPD. Neutrophils and macrophages produce large quantities of proteases such as neutrophil elastase and MMP12 <sup>4, 82</sup>. Oxidative stress adds to the imbalance between proteases and anti-proteases by inactivating the latter <sup>84, 112</sup>. Furthermore, oxidative stress enhances lung inflammation by inducing the release of chemokines which attract more inflammatory cells to the airways <sup>113</sup>. These inflammatory cells induce fibrosis and remodelling of the airway wall and the proteases they release, cause tissue destruction. In addition, oxidants generate upregulation of nuclear factor  $\kappa$ B (NF- $\kappa$ B) and activating protein 1 (AP-1), thereby inducing inflammation <sup>114</sup>. Moreover, oxidants such as reactive oxygen species (ROS) lead to activation of the NLRP3 inflammasome, suggesting a role for this inflammasome in the pathogenesis of COPD <sup>115</sup>. This large signalling complex controls the activation of IL-1 $\beta$  and IL-18, which are elevated in lungs of patients with COPD <sup>116</sup>.

Although research has elucidated parts of the pathogenesis, there are still important questions to be raised. Recently, several exciting new hypotheses are being investigated to discover the missing links in the pathogenesis of COPD. For instance, autophagy, either defective or excessive, is observed in patients with COPD. Since autophagy, lung inflammation and oxidative stress are all witnessed in normal aging as well, it has been hypothesized that the mechanism driving COPD is accelerated aging of the lung <sup>12</sup>.

Furthermore, it is now recognised that interactions between host and microbiome are able to steer immune responses in the host. The microbiome in patients with COPD is less diverse and characterised by an expansion of the Proteobacteria phylum. In a murine model of COPD, lack of microbiota significantly attenuated both inflammation and decline of lung function. Moreover, in patients with COPD, decline in microbial diversity is associated with emphysema and remodelling. It is hypothesized that these interactions can account for the chronicity in COPD <sup>109, 117</sup>. This thought fits perfectly with the concept of innate immune training; a concept that can enlighten the self-perpetuating nature of the inflammatory response in COPD <sup>118, 119</sup>.

Finally, in advanced COPD, it is speculated that auto-immunity may contribute to the pathogenesis. Arguments for and against this hypothesis will be discussed in **Chapter 4**.

## 1.6 TREATMENT

COPD is treatable but not curable. Smoking cessation is the most effective intervention to slow down disease progression. To enhance the success rate of long-term smoking cessation, counselling is often supplemented with nicotine replacement products, such as nicotine gum or patches, and varenicline, bupropion or nortriptyline. Therapy is primarily based on symptom relief and prevention of exacerbations. The degree of airflow limitation, the exacerbation frequency and the symptoms the patients experience determine the choice of bronchodilator and whether or not corticosteroids will be prescribed. Patients with mild to moderate airflow limitation and maximum 1 exacerbation per year, are treated with inhaled bronchodilators (either anticholinergics or  $\beta_2$ -agonists). The choice for short-acting versus long-acting bronchodilators is based on the degree to which patients suffer from symptoms. Patients with severe or very severe airflow limitation and 2 or more exacerbations per year are treated with inhaled corticosteroids and long-acting bronchodilators. When these patients suffer from symptoms, roflumilast, a phosphodiesterase-4 inhibitor can be added to the treatment <sup>3</sup>.

Aside from the pharmacological treatment, patients are encouraged to be physical active and when necessary, to pursue pulmonary rehabilitation. Very severe airflow limitation can warrant for oxygen therapy. To prevent exacerbations prophylactic measures, such as influenza vaccination, are advised. The treatment of exacerbations depends on the cause of the exacerbation (non-infectious, bacterial or viral) <sup>2, 15</sup>.

Currently, many new molecules are tested for safety and efficacy in clinical trials. Most of these new molecules induce bronchodilation. Some molecules exert an antagonistic function on muscarinic receptors while having an agonistic effect on  $\beta_2$ -adrenoceptors. Triple therapy, combining a long-acting anticholinergic and a long-acting  $\beta_2$ -agonist with a corticosteroid in 1 device, is also currently tested. This triple therapy could enhance therapy compliance <sup>120</sup>.

Other candidate-drugs for COPD are new phosphodiesterase inhibitors, mitogen-activated protein (MAP) kinase inhibitors, andolast (modulator of calcium-activated potassium channels), ivacaftor (cystic fibrosis transmembrane conductance regulator (CFTR) enhancer) and several monoclonal antibodies. Of these monoclonal antibodies anti-IL-5 (mepolizumab), anti-IL-5R (benralizumab), anti-IL-13 (lebrikizumab) and anti-IL-8 (ABX-IL8) are currently in phases 2 or 3 of the clinical trials. Others such as anti-IL-6, anti-17(R), anti-CD22 and anti-BAFF(R), are promising but are still in the first phases of testing <sup>120-122</sup>.





## PART I: INTRODUCTION

### CHAPTER 2: MUCOCILIARY CLEARANCE IN COPD

## 2.1 MUCOCILIARY CLEARANCE: INTRODUCTION

Breathing air inevitably means that air-borne particles, toxins, gases, fumes and infectious agents enter the respiratory tract. Therefore, a mucus layer, which lies on top of the airway epithelium, delineates the respiratory tract and captures these inhaled noxious substances <sup>123, 124</sup>. The airway epithelium is largely ciliated and unidirectional beating of these cilia in combination with coughing propels the mucus, loaded with trapped particles and gases, towards the pharynx. This process of mucociliary clearance provides an essential first line of defence in respiratory immunity <sup>40, 123</sup>.

Dysfunction of the mucociliary clearance system can arise from excess mucus production, abnormal mucus hydration or cilia impairment. CS induces all three these defects, resulting in chronic bronchitis in a subpopulation of smokers and patients with COPD. In addition, independent of the presence of chronic bronchitis, mucus exudates cause obstruction of the small airways in patients with COPD and contribute to the narrowing of small airways <sup>44, 47</sup>. Moreover, progression of COPD is associated with the degree to which the lumen of small airways is filled with mucus exudates <sup>44</sup>. Importantly, mucus stasis predisposes for bacterial infections in airways <sup>124, 125</sup>.

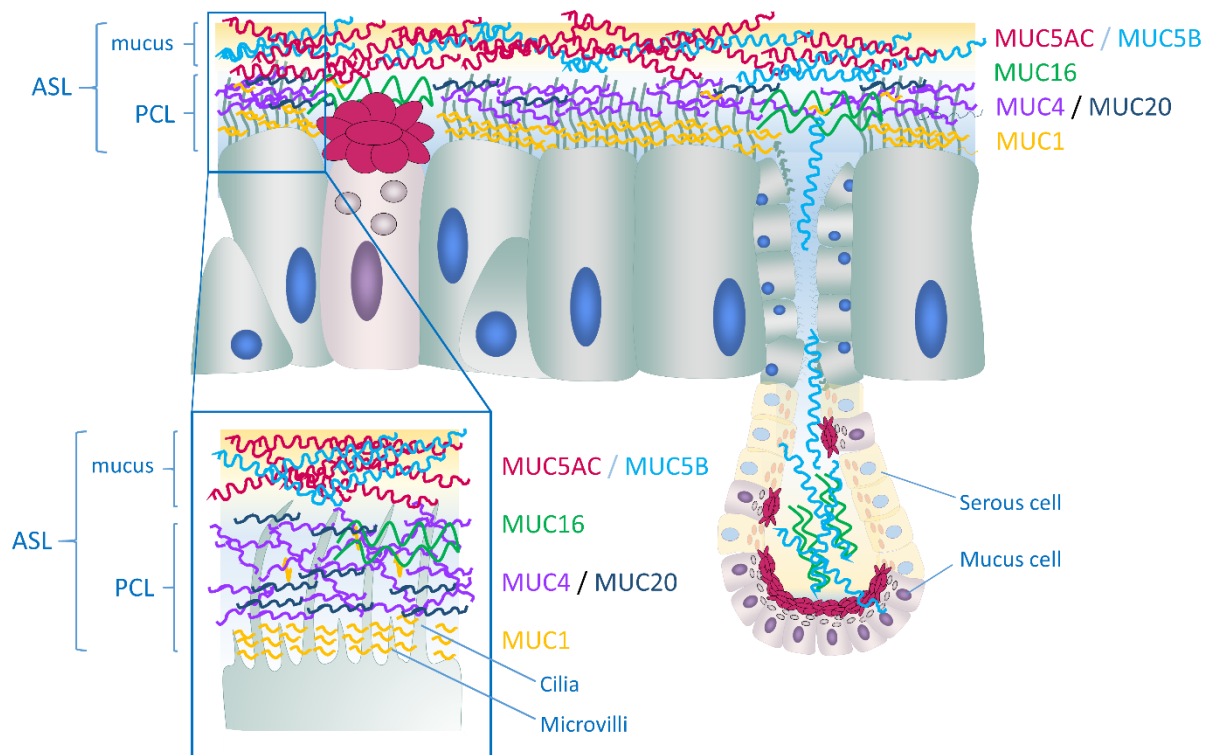
## 2.2 MUCOCILIARY CLEARANCE IN HEALTH

The airway epithelium fulfils many functions in the mucociliary clearance system. Not only does it provide cilia which propel mucus towards the pharynx, it also regulates airway surface liquid hydration, the secretion of immunoglobulins and other anti-microbial substances and provides mucins which constitute a major component of the mucus layer <sup>40, 124, 126</sup>. Furthermore, epithelial cells also provide anti-inflammatory signals preventing patrolling immune cells in the airway lumen of overreacting in case of an encounter with a harmless antigen <sup>89</sup>. The airway epithelium harbours ciliated cells, secretory cells, basal cells and a variety of less frequent cells, such as neuroendocrine cells. The relative contribution of these cell types depends on the airway level <sup>127</sup>. In addition to secretory cells in the epithelium, large airways contain submucosal glands which secrete mucins, proteoglycans and numerous antimicrobial proteins into the airway lumen <sup>40</sup>.

A large proportion of airway epithelial cells is ciliated. The cilia on these airway cells are motile and are typically constructed in a 9 + 2 arrangement of microtubules with dynein arms and radial spokes <sup>128</sup>. Each ciliated epithelial cell generally possesses about 200 cilia at the apical plasma membrane and the cilia beat at a frequency of 10 to 15 Hz <sup>124</sup>. Mucus is unidirectionally propelled towards the pharynx by a vertical

effective stroke of the cilia, while the recovery stroke takes place in the periciliary layer in a horizontal plane<sup>126, 128</sup>. Ciliary beat frequency is regulated by changes in phosphorylation state of ciliary components such as dynein subunits, changes in intracellular pH and  $\text{Ca}^{2+}$ <sup>129</sup>.

In healthy lungs, the epithelial cilia are surrounded by an approximately 7  $\mu\text{m}$  high peri-ciliary layer (PCL) (**Figure 5**). This PCL gel-layer is covered by the mucus layer which is more visco-elastic than the PCL and variable in height. Together, these two layers constitute the airway surface liquid (ASL), which can be regarded as a movable physical barrier<sup>40, 124, 130</sup>.



**Figure 5: Airway surface liquid and mucins.** The periciliary layer (PCL) and the mucus layer together constitute the airway surface liquid (ASL). Cell-tethered mucins (MUC1, MUC4, MUC16 and MUC20) attach to the microvilli and cilia of the airway epithelial cells and provide the gel structure of the PCL. MUC5B and MUC5AC are secreted mucins and form a mucus layer on top of the PCL. Mucus cells in the submucosal glands contribute to the production of MUC5B and MUC16.

In healthy individuals, the mucus layer exists of only 1.5 to 3 % solids, which include mucins, non-mucin proteins, anti-microbial substances, lipids, ions and cellular debris<sup>40, 131</sup>. Much of the properties of the mucus layer are mediated by the large glycoproteins, known as mucins<sup>130</sup>. The predominant mucins in the mucus layer are MUC5AC and MUC5B, both heavily glycosylated proteins with at least one region of amino-acids rich in serine and threonine residues where carbohydrate structures are linked. The rich

diversity of carbohydrates aids in trapping bacteria by interaction with microbial sugar-binding proteins. Furthermore, by oligomerization at the 3' and 5' termini, mucins form a polymer network that provides structure to the mucus gel<sup>40, 130, 132</sup>. Recent research shows that globular proteins are important contributors to this framework and mucin-protein interactions are crucial for the biophysical properties of mucus<sup>133</sup>. Of note, these globular proteins constitute about 60 to 70 % of the solids in the mucus layer<sup>40, 133</sup>.

Mucins are secreted continuously at a baseline level<sup>40</sup>. Submucosal glands release mucins in a circadian rhythm, most likely regulated by the vagal nerve<sup>132</sup>. In contrast, goblet cells, which are a minority population of about 5 % of the epithelial cells in healthy individuals, secrete mucins due to stimulation of P2Y<sub>2</sub> purinergic receptors by the low amount of ATP that is present in the ASL<sup>40, 131</sup>. Before secretion, mucins are packed in vesicles in dehydrated condition. Their negative charges are shielded by Ca<sup>2+</sup> and H<sup>+</sup>. Upon release, mucins dramatically expand and bind water. Therefore, the mucus layer is able to function as a water reservoir for the underlying PCL<sup>124</sup>. Interestingly, MUC5B is thought to be predominantly secreted from the submucosal glands, whereas goblet cells secrete MUC5AC<sup>130</sup>.

In contrast to former believes, the PCL is not a watery layer but a gel-based structure, composed of several different mucins and proteins<sup>134</sup>. Cell-tethered mucins attach to the apical membrane and microvilli (MUC1), to the cilia (MUC4 and MUC20) or to goblet cells (MUC 16) of the airway epithelium (**Figure 5**)<sup>135</sup>. They possess a similar structure as secreted mucins and are heavily glycosylated as well, which causes them to extend far from the cell surface with the carbohydrates branching out from the axis. This conformation resembles that of a bottle brush<sup>136</sup>. This characteristic look of tethered mucins leads to shielding of extra-cellular receptors and hence protection against adhesion of microbial organisms<sup>137</sup>. The cell-tethered mucins and large mucopolysaccharides create a mesh with selective barrier functions<sup>135, 138</sup>. This relatively new concept has elegantly been described as a 'gel-on-brush' structure and explains why secreted mucins do not enter the PCL<sup>138</sup>.

For efficient mucociliary clearance, the ASL must be adequately hydrated<sup>124</sup>. The 'gel-on-brush' model explains that the highly concentrated PCL, with an osmotic pressure higher than that of the mucus layer, can withdraw water from the mucus layer up to the point where the concentration of the latter becomes so high that the osmotic pressure exceeds that of the PCL. At that point the PCL collapses and mucus stasis is established<sup>138</sup>.

ASL hydration basically means a balance between cation absorption and anion secretion. For a large part, water follows passively via the paracellular pathway. Cl<sup>-</sup> secretion is mediated by CFTR (Cystic Fibrosis Transmembrane conductance Regulator) and Na<sup>+</sup> absorption by ENaC (Epithelial Natrium Channel). In

mice,  $\text{Ca}^{2+}$  activated  $\text{Cl}^-$  channels (CaCC) additionally secrete  $\text{Cl}^-$  into the lumen <sup>124</sup>. Importantly, in addition to  $\text{Cl}^-$ ,  $\text{HCO}_3^-$  is secreted in smaller concentrations by CFTR and has a buffering effect on ASL pH <sup>139</sup>. CFTR is a member of the adenine nucleotide-binding cassette transporter subfamily and works as an cAMP-dependent anion channel. ENaC is a heterotrimer with a  $\alpha$ -,  $\beta$ - and  $\gamma$ -subunit. The  $\alpha$ - and  $\gamma$ - subunit need to be proteolytically cleaved for activation. Volume sensors, such as nucleotides (ATP, UTP and UDP), adenosine and short palate lung and nasal epithelial clone 1 (SPLUNC1), regulate ASL hydration. Nucleotides and adenosine do so by interacting with purinergic receptors, initiating  $\text{Cl}^-$  secretion <sup>124, 125</sup>. SPLUNC1 binds directly to ENaC, causing internalisation of this  $\text{Na}^+$  channel and thus, its inactivation <sup>140, 141</sup>. Interestingly, cilia, beating in the mucus layer, sense alterations in mechanical strain which reflect alterations in hydration state of the mucus layer and subsequently regulate ATP release <sup>142</sup>. Regulation of the ion channels also depends on whether or not they are co-expressed. CFTR seems to have a suppressing effect on the activation of ENaC. However, the interactions between both ion channels are not well understood <sup>124, 143</sup>.

## 2.3 MUCOCILIARY CLEARANCE IN COPD

### 2.3.1 CILIARY BEATING IN COPD

CS impairs ciliogenesis, leads to shortened cilia, reduces ciliary beat frequency and increases the number of ciliary microtubule abnormalities<sup>124</sup>. Cilia length was measured in endobronchial biopsies from healthy smokers and non-smokers and a significant 15% reduction in cilia length was detected in healthy smokers<sup>41</sup>. It was recently determined that CS induces upregulation of histone deacetylase 6 activity which results in removal of ciliary proteins and subsequent ciliary shortening<sup>144</sup>. Furthermore, chronic CS exposure of wild-type mice resulted in loss of ciliated cells and decreased ciliary beat frequency mediated by activation of protein kinase C<sup>145</sup>. All these effects on ciliary function will have repercussions on the efficiency of mucociliary clearance, although coughing provides a back-up mechanism for mucus clearance<sup>146</sup>.

### 2.3.2 MUCUS PRODUCTION AND SECRETION IN COPD

The chronic bronchitis phenotype in COPD is characterized by excess production of mucus and is associated with current smoking<sup>147</sup>. In addition, small airway obstruction due to mucus plugging is present in patients with severe COPD, irrespective of the presence of chronic bronchitis, and correlates to disease severity<sup>38, 44</sup>. Both glandular hyperplasia and goblet cell hyperplasia/metaplasia contribute to this overabundance of mucins<sup>38, 40</sup>. In smokers with airflow obstruction, goblet cell numbers and size in the large airways correlate with disease severity<sup>148</sup>. The transition of ciliated cells into goblet cells, is most likely regulated via EGFR (epidermal growth factor receptor) and IL-13. EGFR activation inhibits apoptosis and IL-13 mediates activation of ERK1/2 and STAT6, which promotes the transdifferentiation to goblet cells<sup>149</sup>. A transdifferentiation of Clara cells into goblet cells may also occur<sup>131, 149</sup>. In patients with COPD and in current smokers, EGFR and MUC5AC expression is increased<sup>150, 151</sup>. Takeyama *et al.* showed, both *in vitro* and *in vivo*, that CS induces activation of EGFR and subsequent upregulation of *Muc5AC* and goblet cell numbers<sup>152</sup>. Upregulation of MUC5AC expression can be mediated by many stimuli, among which CS components, microbial agents, neutrophil elastase, MMP9, oxidants and several cytokines<sup>40, 131, 153, 154</sup>. Signalling through one of at least 5 different pathways that have been implicated in the upregulation of *Muc5AC*, leads to rapid production of the protein within 2 hours<sup>130, 132</sup>. The regulation of MUC5B is less understood. Mucin secretion is regulated separately from mucin production and is in goblet cells predominantly mediated via ATP binding to P2Y<sub>2</sub> receptors<sup>155</sup>. Mucin release from submucosal glands is neurologically regulated<sup>40</sup>.

Mucus hypersecretion is driven by an enormous increase in MUC5AC, whereas the relative contribution of MUC5B is unclear<sup>40, 156</sup>. Interestingly, MUC5B is thought to be necessary for airway defence. It forms non-covalent heterotypic complexes with many anti-microbial agents, among which secretory IgA (sIgA) and amylase<sup>130, 156</sup>. Of note, glycosylation of the secretory component of sIgA is necessary for retention in bronchial mucus<sup>130</sup>.

Mucin hypersecretion leads to a substantial increase in the percentage of solids within the mucus layer, causing a relative dehydration<sup>125</sup>. While the mucus layer comprises a maximum of 3% solids in healthy individuals, in smokers, the percentage of solids can increase up to 10 %<sup>40, 157</sup>. Anderson *et al.* observed that the osmotic pressure of the mucus layer causes compression of the PCL when the percentage of solids is higher than 3 %. Furthermore, the percentage of solids is inversely correlated with mucus clearance in patients with chronic bronchitis. Both mucus clearance and the percentage of solids in sputum are negatively associated with airflow limitation in patients with chronic bronchitis<sup>158</sup>.

Developing pre-clinical animal models of chronic bronchitis is difficult since the definition of chronic bronchitis is a clinical one. Furthermore, there is substantial variation between species with regard to the occurrence and localisation of both submucosal glands and goblet cells. In response to CS, mice do not readily develop goblet cell metaplasia. In rats, goblet cell metaplasia following CS exposure is restricted to the proximal airways. In contrast, guinea pigs do develop goblet cell metaplasia in the small airways as well. However, using guinea pigs involves a number of disadvantages such as a greater cost, and a lack of tools (antibodies and gene sequences) to study these animals. Aside from CS, other inducing agents have been used to evoke chronic bronchitis in animals. The most frequently used agents are sulphur dioxide, lipopolysaccharide and proteases. The downside of these agents is that the relevance to mechanisms that occur with CS exposure is unclear. Finally, goblet cell metaplasia can be induced in genetically engineered mice, for instance by overexpression of Th2 cytokines. However, this approach induces other elements (such as eosinophilia) which do not comply with COPD pathogenesis.

### 2.3.3 AIRWAY SURFACE LIQUID HYDRATION STATE IN COPD

Aside from the effects of mucin hypersecretion and increase in percentage of solids in the mucus layer of patients with COPD, ASL is also compromised by direct and indirect effects of CS on the ion channels responsible for hydration<sup>123</sup>.

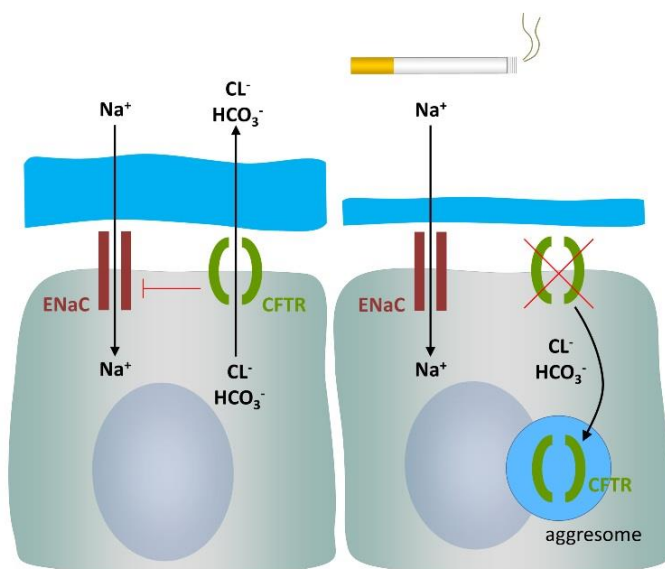
The prototype disease of airway surface dehydration and subsequent mucociliary clearance dysfunction is cystic fibrosis (CF). This disease is caused by mutations of the *Cftr* gene and is recessive inheritable. Patients suffer from severe neutrophilic airway inflammation and mucus stasis from birth onwards and their life

expectancy is reduced due to recurrent bacterial pulmonary infections. The function of the CFTR protein is often completely diminished and as a result there is no active  $\text{Cl}^-$  and  $\text{HCO}_3^-$  secretion to the airway lumen through the CFTR channel. Mucus stasis predisposes for bacterial colonization and neutrophilic inflammation. The proteases which are released from the inflammatory cells further alter the function of ion channels and aggravate the airway surface dehydration. Lack of  $\text{HCO}_3^-$  leads to an acidic pH which inhibits effective bacterial killing <sup>159, 160</sup>.

Although both COPD and CF result in obstructive lung disease in which airway surface dehydration contributes to the pathogenesis, there are several difference between both diseases. In contrast to CF, cigarette smoking induces an acquired dysfunction of the CFTR channel and the function can be restored after smoking cessation. The dysfunction is generally not complete; the CFTR channel remains active for some part <sup>159, 160</sup>.

In cigarette smokers with and without COPD, the CFTR function is suppressed in both upper and lower airways <sup>161, 162</sup>. Moreover, loss of CFTR function correlates with the presence of chronic bronchitis and dyspnea <sup>162</sup>. In chronic smokers, CFTR function is decreased by 55 to 70 %. This acquired dysfunction is thought to be due to internalisation of CFTR in a  $\text{Ca}^{2+}$ -dependent way (**Figure 6**) <sup>124, 157</sup>. Protein misfolding of CFTR due to CS has been suggested as a potential cause for this internalisation <sup>124</sup>. The function of CFTR is also systemically impaired in cigarette smokers and acrolein has been identified as an agent conveying the deleterious effects of CS on CFTR <sup>163</sup>. Furthermore, oxidative stress and heavy metals, both present in lungs of patients with COPD, reduce the activity of CFTR <sup>124, 164</sup>. Pharmacological intervention with ivacaftor, a CFTR potentiator, or roflumilast, a phosphodiesterase inhibitor, improved activation of CFTR

and thereby airway surface dehydration <sup>165, 166</sup>. Interestingly, CFTR dysfunction results in loss of  $\text{HCO}_3^-$  secretion and acidification of ASL, leading to impaired bacterial killing and increased infection risk <sup>139</sup>.



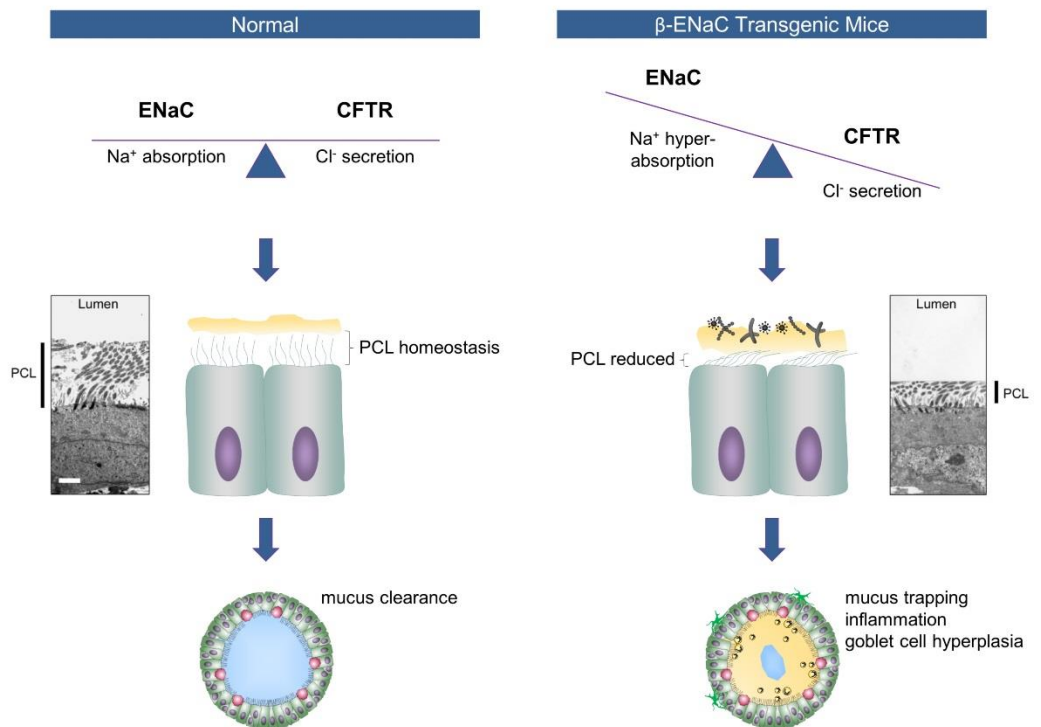
**Figure 6: CFTR and ENaC.** In healthy airways, the presence of CFTR inhibits the function of ENaC. Following cigarette smoke exposure, CFTR is internalized, resulting in loss of  $\text{Cl}^-$  and  $\text{HCO}_3^-$  secretion and activation of ENaC. Adapted from Ghosh et al. *Cell Mol Life Sci.* 2015; 72: 3637-3652 <sup>121</sup>.



The role of ENaC dysfunction in COPD is less clear. Downs *et al.* showed that ROS and H<sub>2</sub>O<sub>2</sub>, both oxidants present in CS, activate ENaC in alveolar epithelial cells<sup>167, 168</sup>. It was also reported that hypoxia inhibits ENaC activation<sup>169</sup>. In lung tissue of COPD patients, Zhao *et al.* observed that the expression of  $\alpha$ - and  $\beta$ -ENaC was increased and inversely correlated with lung function. They also showed that CFTR expression was decreased and this also correlated with lung function<sup>170</sup>. Since CFTR has a suppressive effect on ENaC activity, it can be argued that loss of CFTR might result in activation of ENaC. Furthermore, proteases such as neutrophil elastase and MMP9 are abundantly present in airways of patients with COPD and are potent activators of ENaC by performing the necessary cleaving of the  $\alpha$ - and  $\gamma$ -subunit<sup>124, 125, 160</sup>. Nevertheless, these speculations need scientific proof. Of note, regardless of the importance of ENaC hyperactivation in the pathogenesis of COPD, pharmacological targeting of ENaC seems a promising approach for improving airway surface dehydration<sup>171, 172</sup>.

## 2.4 BETA-ENAC TRANSGENIC MICE: A MURINE MODEL OF AIRWAY SURFACE DEHYDRATION

Research into the role of airway surface dehydration in the pathogenesis of COPD is a challenging quest. In health, airways of mice harbor only few goblet cells and exposure to CS does not substantially influence this feature. Furthermore, mice only possess submucosal glands near the first few tracheal rings in contrast to humans which possess submucosal glands in all the large airways ( $> 2$  mm)<sup>173</sup>. As a result of these characteristics of mice, mimicking airway surface dehydration through increased mucus secretion is not evident. In addition, *cftr*<sup>-/-</sup> mice do not exhibit a lung phenotype<sup>174, 175</sup>. Recently, Shah *et al.* demonstrated that this absence of phenotype in mice is caused by a lack of H<sup>+</sup>/K<sup>+</sup> adenosine triphosphatase (ATP12A), which causes secretion of H<sup>+</sup> into the lumen. In humans and pigs with CFTR dysfunction, this H<sup>+</sup> secretion acidifies the ASL, resulting in impairment of host defenses and increase in airway bacteria<sup>139</sup>.



**Figure 7: βENaC-transgenic mice.** In wild-type mice, CFTR (cystic fibrosis transmembrane conductance regulator) regulates the function of ENaC (epithelial sodium channel), balancing Na<sup>+</sup> absorption and Cl<sup>-</sup> secretion. Normal hydration of the airway surface liquid results in a periciliary layer (PCL) of approximately 7 μm which allows the cilia to beat optimally. In βENaC-transgenic mice, overexpression of βENaC leads to Na<sup>+</sup> hyperabsorption and a subsequent imbalance between Na<sup>+</sup> absorption and Cl<sup>-</sup> secretion. The result is dehydration of the airway surface liquid, compression of the PCL and impaired mucociliary clearance.

Adapted with permission from Mall MA *et al.*, *Nat Med*, 2004;10:487-493<sup>173</sup>.

To obtain airway surface dehydration, Mall and colleagues created transgenic mice that overexpress the  $\beta$ -subunit of ENaC (*Scnn1b*) in an airway specific way by coupling to a clara cell specific promotor (CCSP). This overexpression is responsible for hyperabsorption of  $\text{Na}^+$  and subsequent dehydration of the ASL (**Figure 7**). In contrast to *cftr*<sup>-/-</sup> mice,  $\beta$ ENaC-transgenic ( $\beta$ ENaC-Tg) mice display a lung phenotype resembling cystic fibrosis with reduced mucus transport, airway mucus obstruction and pulmonary death<sup>176</sup>. The severity of the induced lung disease is demonstrated by the high neonatal death due to mucus plugging and subsequent asphyxia. Surviving mice develop remarkable goblet cell metaplasia and airway inflammation, followed by substantial emphysema at early age, features resembling COPD<sup>177</sup>. By backcrossing to a C57BL/6 wild-type background, Johannesson *et al.* created  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice with significantly less mucus plugging and neonatal mortality, resulting in a phenotype more relevant for COPD research<sup>178</sup>.



## PART I: INTRODUCTION

### CHAPTER 3: THE CHRONIC BRONCHITIS PHENOTYPE IN COPD

### 3.1 DEFINITION

Chronic bronchitis (CB) is a disease entity on its own and is most commonly described as: <sup>147</sup>

*“chronic cough and sputum production for at least 3 months per year for two consecutive years”.*

Chronic bronchitis, affecting 3.4 – 22.0 % of the general population, has long been linked to tobacco smoking <sup>179</sup>. Other risk factors include exposure to environmental tobacco smoke, mineral dust and high exposure to noxious gases and fumes. In CB patients without COPD, male gender involves an increased risk for developing CB <sup>180</sup>.

The chronic bronchitis phenotype of COPD describes patients with COPD and concomitant CB, with or without emphysema. In this population of subjects with both COPD and CB, Dijkstra, *et al.* did not find an association with occupational exposures to gases, fumes or mineral dust; nor with male gender <sup>180</sup>. In contrast, the COPDGene study did report an association between the presence of chronic cough and phlegm and occupational exposure to dust and fumes <sup>181</sup>. Furthermore, COPD patients with chronic cough and phlegm are more likely to suffer from allergic upper airway symptoms <sup>182</sup>. The underlying pathological features of chronic bronchitis in COPD have been briefly discussed in **Chapter 1**.

### 3.2 EPIDEMIOLOGY

The prevalence of CB in patients with COPD ranges from 7.4 % up to 74 % <sup>147, 183</sup>. This wide dispersion results from the use of different CB definitions and differences in the studied populations, such as ethnicity, sex and disease severity <sup>147</sup>. Ethnicity may play a role in the prevalence of CB in COPD patients, with a higher prevalence in Caucasian patients with COPD. Gender differences have been an issue of debate. All three possible outcomes (no difference in prevalence between men and women, more prevalent in men and more prevalent in women) have been reported repeatedly <sup>180, 181, 184</sup>. It must be taken into account that cultural issues can influence this outcome, underlining the importance of geographical background of studies <sup>179</sup>. Furthermore, the highest prevalence of CB was found in a cohort of COPD patients with predominantly severe COPD, recruited from university hospitals in France, whereas the lowest prevalence was described in a population-based cohort in South-America with subjects with predominantly mild-to-moderate COPD <sup>179, 183</sup>. This notion emphasises the difficulties in appointing a clear-cut prevalence percentage to this phenotype in patients with COPD.

### 3.3 CLINICAL MANIFESTATIONS AND IMPACT OF CHRONIC BRONCHITIS IN COPD

Linking clinical features to a COPD phenotype encloses several difficulties. First, the natural course of the disease or treatment of the disease may change the phenotype of patients over time. Second, patients can have more than one phenotype. And finally, patients can suffer from several diseases<sup>14</sup>. However, making an abstraction of these difficulties, the CB phenotype in COPD has been associated with several clinical outcomes.

In the COPDGene study, COPD patients with CB exhibited worse **respiratory symptoms**. These symptoms included wheezing and awakening by cough or dyspnea<sup>185</sup>. The ECLIPSE study, the PLATINO study and a population-based study in China all reported that COPD patients with CB had on average worse airflow limitation than those without CB<sup>32, 183, 186</sup>. Moreover, in the Copenhagen City Heart Study, an excess decline in FEV<sub>1</sub> of 22.8 ml/year was detected in men with COPD and CB compared to male COPD patients without CB. There was no significant excess decline in FEV<sub>1</sub> in women with both COPD and CB. In this cohort, chronic mucus hypersecretion was also associated with hospitalization due to COPD<sup>187</sup>.

The presence of chronic productive cough significantly affects health-related **quality of life** of patients with COPD<sup>147</sup>. This was illustrated in the COPDGene and ECLIPSE studies by worse St. George's Respiratory Questionnaire disease-specific quality of life scores and in the PLATINO study by more limitations due to physical health<sup>32, 183, 185</sup>.

An important clinical outcome in COPD is the **exacerbation** rate, which has a significant impact on the progression of the disease<sup>188</sup>. In the GOLD executive summary, an exacerbation is described as "an acute event characterized by a worsening of the patient's respiratory symptoms that is beyond normal day-to-day variations and leads to a change in medication"<sup>2</sup>. Reports regarding the association between the chronic bronchitis phenotype in COPD and COPD exacerbations render inconsistent data. In the ECLIPSE study, COPD patients with CB did not have a significantly increased risk for exacerbations<sup>189</sup>. Additionally, in the PLATINO study, the number of exacerbations in the previous year did not differ significantly between COPD patients with and without CB, although the percentage of subjects with both COPD and CB which reported at least one exacerbation, was significantly higher than in COPD subjects without CB<sup>183</sup>. In contrast, in the COPDGene study, patients with both COPD and CB reported significantly more exacerbations than COPD patients without CB. Moreover, COPD patients with CB experienced more severe exacerbations in the previous year compared to those without CB<sup>185</sup>. Results of other patient-based studies support the association between the presence of CB and COPD exacerbations<sup>25, 30</sup>. Interestingly,

even a productive cough which has not been present for two consecutive years, is associated with increased exacerbation risk and increased mortality risk <sup>190</sup>.

Whether or not COPD patients with CB have an increased **mortality** is under discussion as well. Data from the Copenhagen City Heart study show that the presence of chronic mucus hypersecretion entails a relative risk (RR) of death from COPD with pulmonary infection of 3.5 (95 % confidence interval (CI) 1.8-7.1). However this study did not indicate that COPD patients with CB have an increased mortality risk in absence of pulmonary infection <sup>191</sup>. In a study incorporating two rural Finnish cohorts, Pelkonen *et al.* determined that the presence of CB increased the hazard ratio for all-cause mortality in addition to mortality due to respiratory and cardiovascular diseases <sup>192</sup>. However, in the NHANES study, only a trend towards increased all-cause mortality risk was registered (RR: 1.2 (95 % CI: 0.97-1.4) <sup>193</sup>. These conflicting data suggest the need for further epidemiological research.

### 3.4 TREATMENT

Smoking cessation is the most important intervention and can improve cough and mucociliary function. Mucus clearance can be improved by chest physiotherapy. Pharmaceuticals improving symptoms of chronic bronchitis include short-acting  $\beta$ -adrenergic receptor agonists, methylxanthines, glucocorticoids and antioxidants <sup>147, 182</sup>. A meta-analysis reviewing the effect of mucoactive drugs, revealed that the use of N-acetylcysteine or carbocysteine reduced the number of exacerbations <sup>194</sup>. Furthermore, the use of low dose macrolides reduced the number of exacerbations as well; however, there is no additional benefit for COPD patients with CB <sup>182</sup>.



### 3.5 OVERVIEW OF EPIDEMIOLOGICAL STUDIES REGARDING THE CHRONIC BRONCHITIS PHENOTYPE IN COPD

Study (ref)	Subjects	Follow-up	Prevalence in COPD	Main observations regarding COPD patients with CB
<b>Copenhagen City Heart Study</b> 187, 191 <b>Population-based Longitudinal</b>	14223 subjects	10 years	ND	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Association with FEV<sub>1</sub> decline</li> <li>• Association with hospitalization due to COPD</li> <li>• Association with COPD-related mortality with pulmonary infection</li> <li>• No association with COPD-related mortality without pulmonary infection</li> </ul>
<b>ECLIPSE Study</b> <sup>32, 189, 195</sup> <b>Patient-based Longitudinal</b>	2138 patients GOLD II-IV	3 years	34.66 % at baseline	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Lower mean FEV<sub>1</sub> at baseline but not a more rapid decline</li> <li>• Association with lower health-related quality of life</li> <li>• No association with number of exacerbations</li> </ul>
<b>Population-based Study in Finland</b> 192 <b>Longitudinal</b>	1711 men 40-59 years	40 years	10.37 % at baseline	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Cumulative incidence of COPD + CB = 19%</li> <li>• Association with lower FEV<sub>0.75</sub></li> <li>• Association with all-cause mortality</li> <li>• Association with mortality by respiratory and cardiovascular diseases</li> </ul>
<b>COPDGene Study</b> 185 <b>Patient-based Cross-sectional</b>	1061 patients GOLD II-IV		27.33 %	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Association with respiratory symptoms</li> <li>• Association with lower health-related quality of life (SGRQ and mMRC)</li> <li>• Association with number of exacerbations in the previous year (including severe exacerbations)</li> </ul>
<b>PLATINO Study</b> 183 <b>Population-based Cross-sectional</b>	5314 subjects (759 with COPD)		7.4 %	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Association with lower FEV<sub>1</sub></li> <li>• Association with respiratory symptoms</li> <li>• Association with lower quality of life (short form-12 physical score, limitation due to physical health)</li> <li>• No significant association with number of exacerbations</li> </ul>
<b>Patient-based study in Spain</b> 196 <b>Cross-sectional</b>	331 patients GOLD I-IV		44.7 %	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• No association with exacerbations</li> <li>• Association with arterial hypertension, dyslipidemia, sleep apnea syndrome and diabetes</li> </ul>
<b>Population-based Study in China</b> 186 <b>Cross-sectional</b>	20245 subjects (1668 with COPD)		29.98 %	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Association with current smoking and male gender</li> <li>• Association with FEV<sub>1</sub>/FVC (%) and dyspnoea severity (mMRC)</li> </ul>
<b>Patient-based study in France</b> <sup>30</sup> <b>Cross-sectional</b>	433 patients GOLD I-IV (> 50% III-IV)		74.1%	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Association with frequent exacerbations, (moderate and severe exacerbations)</li> <li>• Number of exacerbations in the previous year = independent factor linked to CB</li> </ul>
<b>Patient-based study in Sweden</b> 29 <b>Cross-sectional</b>	373 patients GOLD stage III-IV		36.97 %	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Association with current smoking</li> <li>• Association with frequent exacerbations</li> <li>• Association with musculoskeletal symptoms</li> </ul>

ND: not determined



## PART I: INTRODUCTION

### CHAPTER 4: B CELLS, ECTOPIC LYMPHOID FOLLICLES AND B CELL-ACTIVATING FACTOR IN COPD

Based on:

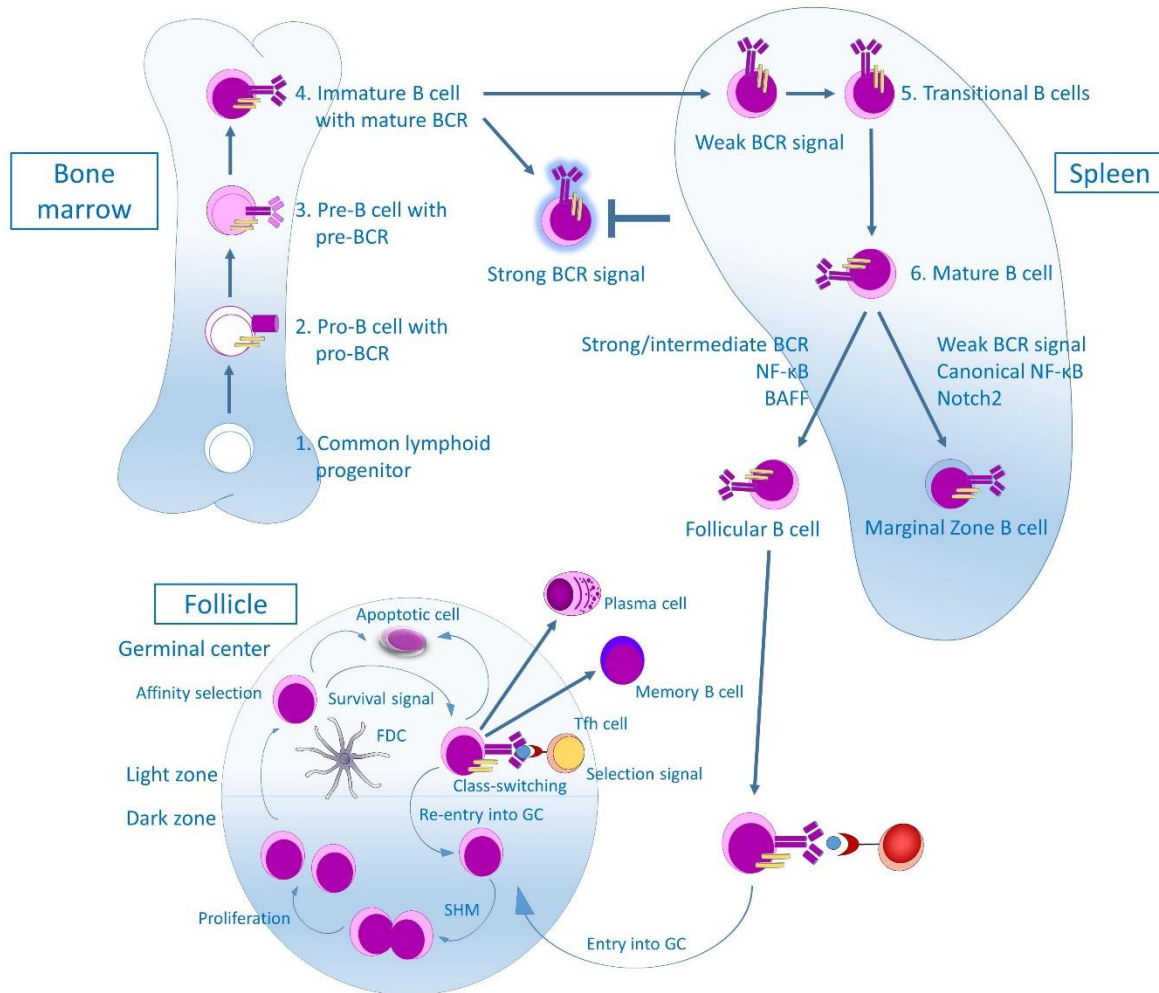
Polverino F\*, **Seys LJ\***, Bracke KR, Owen CA. B Cells in Chronic Obstructive Pulmonary Disease: Moving to Center Stage. *Am J Physiol Lung Cell Mol Physiol* 2016; 311: L687-L695 <sup>197</sup>. (\* equal contribution)

## 4.1 B CELLS, ECTOPIC LYMPHOID FOLLICLES AND B CELL-ACTIVATING FACTOR: INTRODUCTION

### 4.1.1 B CELL DEVELOPMENT

B cells develop from common lymphoid progenitor cells through a highly controlled process. The early developmental stages take place in specialized niches in bone marrow (**Figure 8**)<sup>198</sup>. The differentiation from pro-B cells into immature B cells depends on rearrangement of immunoglobulin heavy-chain genes, followed by rearrangement of light-chain loci. Strongly self-reactive immature B cells follow the path of either receptor editing or clonal deletion<sup>199</sup>. Weakly or non-self-reactive B cells develop into transitional B cell stages and further into mature B cells; a process that is predominantly completed in the spleen. At this point B cells have become either marginal zone B cells or follicular B cells, depending on the strength of the B cell receptor (BCR) signal and the presence of B cell-activating factor (BAFF)<sup>199, 200</sup>. Marginal zone B cells are located in the marginal sinus of the spleen, have the capacity to self-renew and are primarily responsive to blood-borne pathogens<sup>200</sup>. Follicular B cells – the fate chosen by the majority of B cells – recirculate through the bloodstream.

When passing through lymph nodes, a chemotactic gradient of CXC-chemokine ligand 13 (CXCL13), which binds to collagen IV in the basal lamina of the high endothelial venules and the surrounding reticular network, entice B cells to migrate through the endothelial wall into B cell follicles<sup>201-203</sup>. This process is mediated by the interaction of CXCL13 with its receptor CXCR5, which is expressed by B cells and T follicular helper (T<sub>fh</sub>) cells. In lymph nodes, an encounter with cognate antigen is mainly facilitated through antigen presentation by follicular dendritic cells (FDC), macrophages and dendritic cells (DC)<sup>201</sup>. Subsequent to antigen-recognition, B cells can differentiate into extrafollicular plasma cells, germinal center cells or early memory cells, depending largely on the strength of the BCR antigen recognition. High affinity will induce the formation of plasma cells which then produce high affinity immunoglobulins (Ig). In case of low to moderate affinity of the BCR for the antigen, B cells will enter the germinal center reaction, which is defined by affinity maturation, somatic hypermutation and class switch recombination. Mutated BCRs with high affinity are positively selected via interaction with FDC and become either long-lived memory cells or plasma cells<sup>200, 204, 205</sup>.



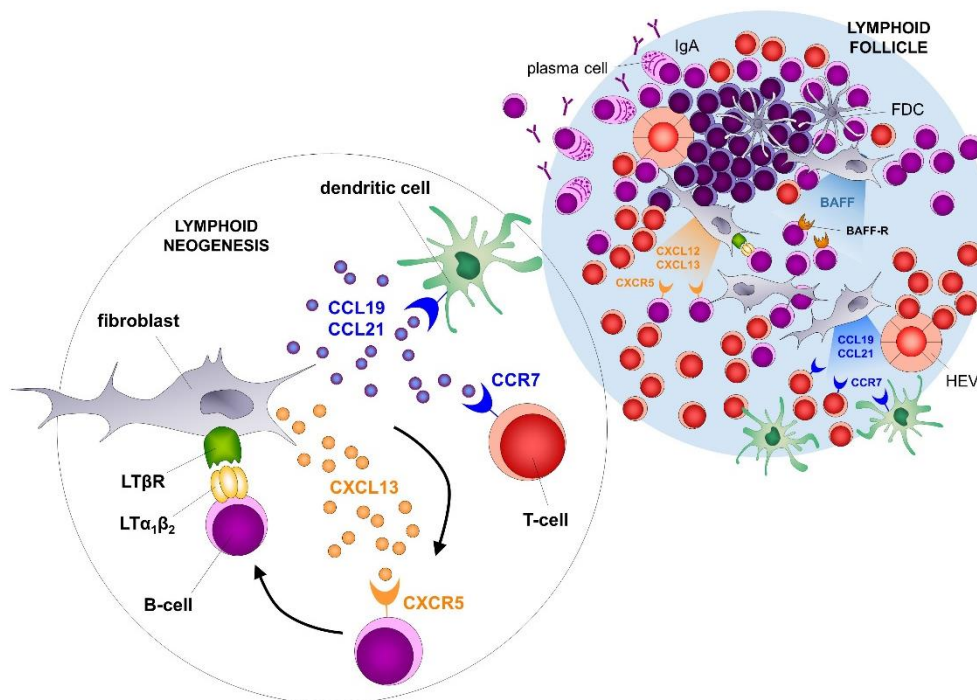
**Figure 8: B cell development.** B cell development begins in the bone marrow from common lymphoid progenitor cells (1). Via a pro-B cell (2) and pre-B cell stage (3), B cells develop into an immature B cell which possesses a mature B cell receptor (BCR) (4). Maturation proceeds via two transitional stage (5) and is completed in the spleen (6). At this point a fate decision is made whether B cells become marginal zone B cells or follicular B cells. The decision is dependent on the strength of the BCR signal, the presence of BAFF, Notch2 and NF- $\kappa$ B activation. Marginal zone B cells reside in the marginal sinus in the spleen, whereas follicular B cells recirculate and enter follicles in secondary lymphoid organs in search of their cognate antigen. When antigen is encountered and co-stimulatory signals are provided by T cells at the B cell/T cell border, B cells can enter the germinal center (GC) to increase the affinity of their BCR for the antigen. In the dark zone of the germinal center, B cells undergo somatic hypermutation (SHM) and proliferation. Next, B cells enter the light zone of the germinal center. Follicular dendritic cells (FDC) present antigen and the affinity of the mutated BCRs for the antigen is tested. Low affinity results in apoptosis. B cells with high affinity compete for T follicular helper cell (Tfh cell) help. Finally, B cells can either re-enter the dark zone for further affinity maturation, become a memory B cell or plasma cell.

Adapted from Heesters *et al. Nat rev Immunol*, 2014; 14: 495-504<sup>200</sup>.

#### 4.1.2 ECTOPIC LYMPHOID FOLLICLE FORMATION IN LUNG

In health, mucosal immunity in the lung does not seem to incorporate organized lymphoid tissue. The presence of organized bronchus-associated lymphoid tissue (BALT) in healthy adults is debatable<sup>206, 207</sup>. The formation of BALT requires a specialized epithelium above the organized lymphoid follicles and this lymphoepithelium has only rarely been observed<sup>208</sup>. In contrast, ectopic lymphoid follicles which show varying degrees of organization, have been described in healthy controls<sup>110, 209, 210</sup>. This organization includes the presence of B- and T cell areas, follicular dendritic cells, high endothelial venules, germinal center formation and efferent lymphatic vessels<sup>208, 211</sup>. Fully organized, these lymphoid follicles are often called inducible BALT (iBALT) or tertiary lymphoid organs (TLO), indicating their similarity with secondary lymphoid organs such as lymph nodes<sup>206, 211</sup>.

The process responsible for the formation of ectopic lymphoid follicles is called lymphoid neogenesis. It is initiated by repeated or chronic inflammation in non-lymphoid organs<sup>206, 212</sup>. Much like lymph node organogenesis, the basic ingredients of lymphoid neogenesis are stromal cells, haematopoietic cells, homeostatic chemokines and their receptors, adhesion molecules and cytokines (**Figure 9**)<sup>206, 213</sup>.



**Figure 9: Lymphoid neogenesis.** Lymphoid follicle formation begins with the expression of lymphotoxin  $\alpha_1\beta_2$  (LT  $\alpha_1\beta_2$ ) by inducing cells, such as B cells, and the expression of lymphotoxin  $\beta$  receptor (LT $\beta$ R) by stromal cells, such as fibroblasts. Interaction of LT $\alpha_1\beta_2$  with LT $\beta$ R leads to the release of homeostatic chemokines which attract dendritic cells, T cells and B cells.

Briefly, in lymph node organogenesis, lymphoid tissue inducer cells express lymphotoxin  $\alpha_1\beta_2$  (LT $\alpha_1\beta_2$ ) which interacts with the LT $\beta$ -receptor (LT $\beta$ R) on lymphoid tissue organizer cells. This induces the expression of adhesion molecules and homeostatic chemokines, resulting in accumulation and organization of lymphocytes and dendritic cells into lymph nodes. In this process, CC-chemokine ligand (CCL)19, CCL21, CXC-chemokine ligand (CXCL)12 and CXCL13 attract DC, T and B cells via the receptors CCR7 and CXCR5<sup>213-215</sup>. The cells and molecules involved in this process are not necessarily identical for lymphoid neogenesis and several murine models of COPD have been used to investigate both the similarities and the discrepancies between both (see **4.2.3 Lymphoid neogenesis in murine models of COPD**)<sup>206, 216</sup>.

#### 4.1.3 B CELL-ACTIVATING FACTOR

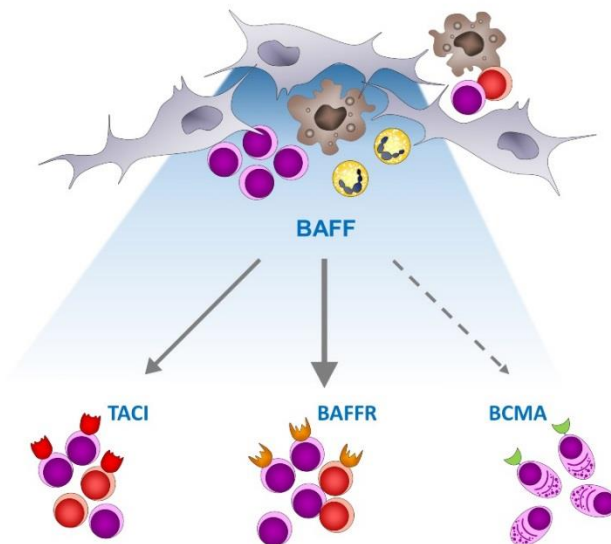
The tightly controlled process of B cell development does not only rely on BCR editing but requires the presence of several survival factors as well. One of these factors is B cell-activating factor from the tumor necrosis factor (TNF) family, also known as BAFF, which was discovered in 1999. BAFF is a type II transmembrane homotrimer protein and signals through three receptors: BAFF-receptor (BAFFR), transmembrane activator and cyclophilin ligand interactor (TACI) and B cell maturation antigen (BCMA). BAFF itself is produced by stromal cells, innate immune cells, activated T cells and B cells, whereas the receptors are predominantly located on lymphocyte subsets (**Figure 10**). A proliferation-inducing ligand (APRIL), a family member of BAFF, also interacts with TACI and BCMA<sup>217-219</sup>. B cell homeostasis requires processed soluble BAFF through proteolytic cleavage; however, membrane-bound BAFF is active as well<sup>220</sup>.

BAFF functions primarily as a necessary survival and maturation factor for B cells through interaction with BAFFR<sup>218, 221</sup>. Both BAFF<sup>-/-</sup> and BAFFR<sup>-/-</sup> mice exhibit a limited number of peripheral B cells past transitional stage 1<sup>217, 221, 222</sup>. Pro- and pre-B cells in the bone marrow do not seem to rely on BAFF signaling. BAFF interaction with BAFFR induces activation of the non-canonical NF- $\kappa$ B pathway via de-repression of NF- $\kappa$ B inducing kinase (NIK), resulting in upregulation of anti-apoptotic proteins. In contrast, BAFF signaling through TACI activates the classical NF- $\kappa$ B pathway and negatively regulates the B cell pool<sup>221, 223</sup>. Furthermore, TACI is necessary for T cell-independent responses and class-switch recombination<sup>224</sup>. BAFF signaling through BCMA activates classical NF- $\kappa$ B as well and results in promotion of long-lived plasma cell maintenance in bone marrow<sup>218, 221</sup>.

Systemic BAFF production is thought to be relatively constant and Gorelik *et al.* demonstrated that radio-resistant non-hematopoietic cells are capable of sustaining B cell homeostasis <sup>225, 226</sup>. For instance, in secondary lymphoid organs, fibroblastic reticular cells are responsible for the production of BAFF that is necessary for B cell homeostasis and organization of follicles <sup>227</sup>. However, within germinal centers, T follicular helper (Tfh) cell-derived BAFF is indispensable for efficient selection of high affinity B cell clones <sup>228</sup>. BAFF derived from other immune cells is also thought to be most important during inflammation <sup>229</sup>.

Alongside the non-redundant role in B cell homeostasis, other immune cells are affected by BAFF as well. BAFF promotes T helper type 1 (Th1)-mediated and inhibits Th2-mediated responses and promotes the development of Th17 cells <sup>229, 230</sup>. In addition, BAFF induces survival of monocytes and differentiation of monocytes into macrophage-like cells <sup>231</sup>. Furthermore, DC activation and maturation is stimulated by BAFF <sup>232</sup>.

Soon after its discovery, BAFF has been implicated in several auto-immune diseases. Belimumab, a monoclonal antibody against BAFF, is already approved for use in patients with systemic lupus erythematosus (SLE). Aside from SLE, rheumatoid arthritis, multiple sclerosis and primary Sjögren syndrome have repeatedly been associated with excessive levels of BAFF as well <sup>233</sup>. In addition, abnormal BAFF levels have also been detected in other diseases such as graft-versus-host disease, common variable immunodeficiency, several infections, allergy and hematological and lymphoid cancers <sup>224</sup>.



**Figure 10: B cell-activating factor (BAFF) and its receptors.** BAFF is produced by innate immune cells, stromal cells, activated T cells and B cells. BAFF interacts with the highest affinity to BAFF-receptor (BAFFR) which is located on B cells and T cell subsets. BAFF also interacts with Transmembrane Activator and Cyclophilin ligand Interactor (TACI). BAFF binds with the least affinity to B cell maturation antigen (BCMA) situated on plasma cells.



## 4.2 B CELLS, ECTOPIC LYMPHOID FOLLICLES AND B CELL-ACTIVATING FACTOR IN COPD

### 4.2.1 ISOLATED B CELLS IN THE LUNGS IN COPD

Under homeostatic conditions, a limited number of B cells forms an integrated part of the mucosal immunity in lungs. Memory B cells, locally generated during infection, remain in the lung in peri-bronchial infiltrates and can rapidly differentiate into plasma cells when activated<sup>234-236</sup>. Upon reinfection, these tissue-resident memory B cells produce not only more immunoglobulins but also cross-reactive immunoglobulins important in response to viral escape<sup>237, 238</sup>. Brandsma and colleagues observed a significant increase in memory B cells in lungs of patients with COPD compared to non-COPD controls, but no significant difference was noticed in total CD20+ B cells between both groups<sup>239</sup>. In contrast, Bosken *et al.* and Hogg *et al.* did detect a significant raise in total B cell numbers in peri-bronchiolar regions and additionally, a correlation between the accumulated volume of B cells and COPD severity<sup>44, 110</sup>. The number of B cells was also significantly expanded in central airways of patients with COPD and this correlated with disease severity as well<sup>240</sup>. Alongside CD20+ B cells, plasma cells are located in subepithelial and periglandular regions of the airways and produce predominantly polymeric IgA, a crucial component of the mucociliary clearance system of the airways<sup>207, 241</sup>. Smokers with chronic bronchitis and airflow obstruction tend to harbor increased numbers of plasma cells in these peri-bronchial regions. Moreover, the majority of the peri-glandular plasma cells produce IL-4 and/or IL-5, suggesting a role in mucus hypersecretion<sup>241</sup>.

### 4.2.2 ECTOPIC LYMPHOID FOLLICLES IN COPD

In COPD, B cells are the dominant cell type in ectopic lymphoid follicles and these follicles are located in peri-bronchiolar and peri-vascular regions and in lung parenchyma<sup>44, 210, 242, 243</sup>. The landmark paper of Hogg *et al.* demonstrated an association between disease severity and the percentage of small airways containing lymphoid follicles<sup>44</sup>. Several other studies have since corroborated an increase in number and even size of lymphoid follicles in patients with severe COPD compared to never-smokers and smokers without airflow limitation<sup>219, 244, 245</sup>. Lymphoid follicles in patients with COPD seem to possess some characteristic features. In order to organize lymphoid follicles, lymphocytes need to be recruited to the lung. In patients with COPD, there is an increased expression of CXCL13 which attracts B cells<sup>246</sup>. In addition, lymphocytes within lymphoid follicles express CXCR3 and the percentage of CXCR3+ cells correlates inversely with the degree of airflow limitation. Furthermore, an increase in expression of CXCL9, CXCL10 and CXCL11 – ligands of CXCR3 – was measured in macrophages, DC and airway epithelium in the

vicinity of the lymphoid follicles, suggesting a role for CXCR3 in lymphocyte recruitment and/or retention in lymphoid follicles in patients with COPD <sup>244</sup>. Recently, Roos *et al.* measured an elevated level of IL-17A in peripheral lung tissue of patients with COPD compared to non-COPD controls. They found that IL-17A contributes to the formation of lymphoid follicles in end-stage COPD by inducing CXCL12 expression <sup>108</sup>.

Few differences are reported in cellular composition of lymphoid follicles in patients with and without COPD. Plumb *et al.* observed an increased number of regulatory T cells (Tregs) in lymphoid follicles in patients with COPD compared to control subjects. No differences were detected in Treg count in subepithelial areas and unorganized clusters of lymphocytes, indicating that this augmented Treg count is specific for lymphoid follicles. A possible function of these Tregs in the lymphoid follicles in COPD is mediation of B cell-activity; however, their exact role must yet be elucidated <sup>245, 247</sup>. Lymphoid follicles of patients with COPD also harbor an increased number of CD57+ cells. The function of these cells within *the* follicles needs to be unraveled as well <sup>210</sup>. Although cellular composition does not substantially alter, two types of lymphoid follicles are described based on the density of apoptotic B cells and BAFF-producing B cells. Compared to mild to moderate COPD, lymphoid follicles in severe COPD harbor less apoptotic B cells and more BAFF-producing B cells <sup>219</sup>.

Although crucial to determine whether these lymphoid follicles are beneficial or harmful in the pathogenesis of COPD, the inducing antigens are still unknown. However, some advances have been made that can help to narrow down the possible suspects. First, using 3D-reconstruction, Mori *et al.* found that the vast majority of lymphoid follicles are in contact with alveolar epithelium and that this epithelium changes towards a columnar type in severe COPD. At the interface between lymphoid follicles and changed alveolar epithelium, they observed an accumulation CD207+ DC, which are responsible for antigen-capturing in the alveoli <sup>243</sup>. Furthermore, lymphoid follicles are in contact with a vast network of lymphatic vessels <sup>243</sup>. In patients with severe COPD, an increased number of lymphatic vessels are detected in the alveolar parenchyma when compared to never-smokers <sup>248</sup>. Van der Strate *et al.* described that in patients with emphysema, B cells in lymphoid follicles engage in an oligoclonal, antigen-specific proliferation and the authors did not detect viral nor bacterial nucleic acids <sup>242</sup>. This oligoclonality was recently corroborated by Baraldo *et al.* who reported this feature in COPD patients with and without  $\alpha$ 1-antitrypsin deficiency <sup>249</sup>. Finally, a network analysis of lung transcriptomics recently showed a distinct B cell signature and lymphoid follicle formation in COPD patients with emphysema but not in those with obstructive bronchiolitis <sup>250</sup>.

#### 4.2.3 LYMPHOID NEOGENESIS IN MURINE MODELS OF COPD

To unravel the inducing factors and cellular and molecular requirements of lymphoid follicle formation in COPD, murine models of the disease are of great use. Hundreds of genetically manipulated strains are available in which a single gene is either over-expressed or knocked-out, making it possible to study the specific role of these genes and their proteins<sup>251, 252</sup>.

Exposing wild-type mice chronically (i.e. 3 to 6 months) to CS leads to lymphoid follicle formation in the lungs. The number and size of the follicles increase as the duration of the exposure increases<sup>242</sup>. As in patients with COPD, these follicles are situated in peri-bronchial, peri-vascular and parenchymal areas. Using this model, Demoor *et al.* showed that LT $\alpha$  – although essential in the formation of secondary lymphoid organs - is not necessary for the development of lymphoid follicles in the lung. However, deficiency in LT $\alpha$  resulted in very low IgA levels in bronchoalveolar lavage (BAL) fluid, suggesting a lack of germinal center formation and isotype-switching in absence of LT $\alpha$ . In addition, this paper indicated that stimulation of LT $\beta$ R in lung fibroblasts resulted in enhanced mRNA expression of CXCL13 and CCL19, supporting the presumption that fibroblasts take on the role of organizer cells in the formation of ectopic follicles<sup>253-255</sup>.

Other studies showed that deletion of CCR5 or CCR6 attenuated the formation of CS-induced follicles, whereas CS-exposure of CCR7<sup>-/-</sup> mice unexpectedly demonstrated that CCR7 was not required for this process, again in contrast to lymph node organogenesis<sup>256-258</sup>. On the other hand, neutralization of CXCL13 by administering a monoclonal anti-CXCL13 antibody to CS-exposed wild-type mice, almost completely abolished formation of organized follicles without substantially affecting the presence of unorganized lymphoid aggregates. As a result, airway inflammation and emphysematous destruction of lung parenchyma were significantly attenuated<sup>246</sup>. Finally, a recent study using the CS-induced COPD model, demonstrated a crucial role of interleukin (IL)-17 in CS-induced lymphoid follicle formation. Deletion of IL-17 led to unorganized lymphoid clusters of B cells as opposed to highly organized lymphoid follicles in wild-type mice. This was accompanied by a reduction in the number of CXCL12+ cells, but did not have an influence on CXCL13 expression<sup>108</sup>.

Patients with COPD are more vulnerable to respiratory infections and are often chronically colonized by pathogens, hence murine models using pathogens or pathogen-derived products are highly relevant to study lymphoid follicle formation in COPD<sup>15, 206</sup>. Using both intra-nasal instillation with lipopolysaccharide (LPS) and influenza infection, Rangel-Moreno *et al.* showed that lymphoid follicles can be induced in lungs

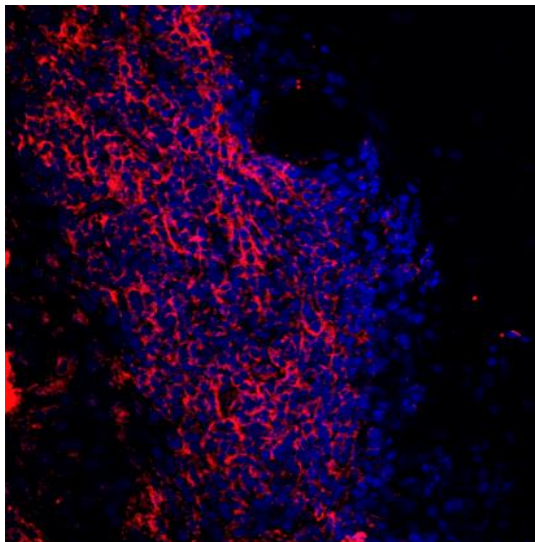
in absence of ILC3-type lymphoid tissue inducer cells. Furthermore, they demonstrated a crucial role for IL-17 in the initiation of lymphoid follicle formation <sup>259</sup>. Fleige *et al.* also concluded that IL-17 is important in the development of lymphoid follicles by stimulating stromal cells to produce CXCL12. Additionally, they showed that the induction of lymphoid follicles is pathogen-dependent <sup>260</sup>.

Recently, in a murine model using LPS/elastase treatment, it was illustrated that chronic inflammation results in an altered microbiota in the lungs. Moreover, this paper showed that microbiota enhance inflammation and induce the production of IL-17A by T cells. Neutralizing IL-17A reduced lung compliance, airway inflammation and lymphoid follicle formation <sup>109</sup>. Finally, although lymphocytes constitute the majority of lymphoid follicles, two different infection models have demonstrated the indispensable role of DC in maintenance of lymphoid follicles <sup>261, 262</sup>.

#### 4.2.4 B CELL-ACTIVATING FACTOR IN COPD

In 2010, Polverino and colleagues reported that BAFF expression was increased in alveolar macrophages and lymphoid follicles of patients with COPD compared to non-COPD controls. Moreover, the number of BAFF-positive macrophages correlated inversely to airflow limitation in patients with COPD <sup>263</sup>. Recently, this group added that the number of BAFF-positive B cells in blood and in BAL was also significantly higher in patients with COPD compared to control subjects. Furthermore, they observed more lymphoid follicles containing a high percentage BAFF-positive B cells in patients with severe COPD compared to patients with mild/moderate COPD <sup>219</sup>. BAFF mRNA expression is significantly higher in bronchial epithelium of patients with COPD versus non-COPD subjects as well. In addition, co-culture of healthy B cells with airway epithelium from patients with COPD induced upregulation of TACI in B cells. Conversely, airway epithelium

from healthy controls did not cause this effect in B cells <sup>264</sup>. Evidence of a role for BAFF in COPD was also illustrated in the recent network analysis of lung transcriptomics of patients with COPD, which revealed that BAFF protein was specifically upregulated in lung tissue of patients with emphysema but not in patients with obstructive bronchiolitis <sup>250</sup>.



**Figure 11: Confocal microscopy image of a BAFF-staining of a lymphoid follicle (COPD patient GOLD stage III). Blue: DAPI. Red: BAFF.**

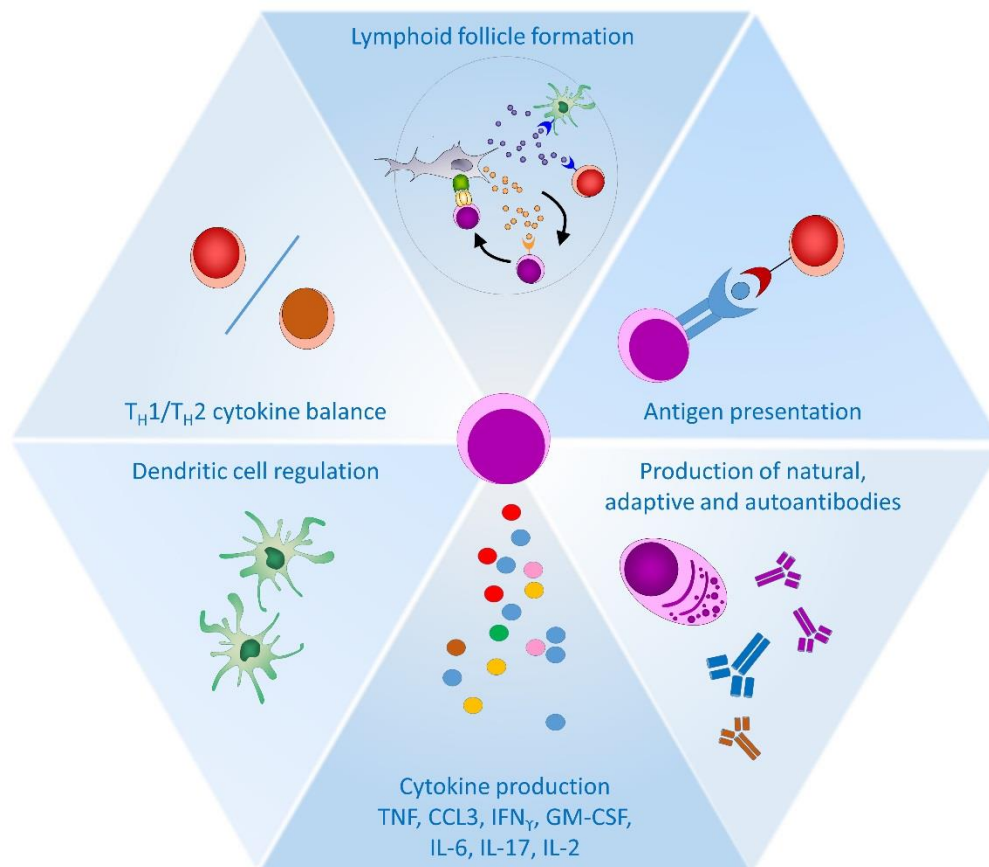
#### 4.3 FUNCTION OF B CELLS, ECTOPIC LYMPHOID FOLLICLES AND B CELL-ACTIVATING FACTOR IN COPD

The respiratory system is in constant contact with the outside world and utilizes mucociliary clearance as a first line defense <sup>40</sup>. An important component in this system is secretory IgA (sIgA), produced by local plasma cells in the subepithelial areas of airways <sup>265</sup>. Moyron-Quiroz *et al.* demonstrated that ectopic lymphoid follicles are capable of mounting a primary immune response against influenza in mice who lack secondary lymphoid organs (SLO), thus driving local Ig production <sup>266</sup>. Moreover, lymphoid follicles in the lung were shown to be a niche for maintenance of memory cells. This was demonstrated by an effective secondary immune response to influenza in absence of SLOs <sup>267</sup>. In lungs of patients with COPD, there is an increase in plasma cell number and along with disease severity, lymphoid follicles develop <sup>44, 241</sup>. As expected, an elevated IgA synthesis is detected in lungs of COPD patients compared to non-COPD subjects <sup>264</sup>. Interestingly, this does not translate in an increased mucosal IgA immunity due to downregulation of the receptor responsible for translocation of polymeric immunoglobulins to the airway lumen (pIgR) <sup>268</sup>. Downregulation of pIgR and decrease of sIgA in BAL both correlate with disease severity <sup>268, 269</sup>.

The role of lymphoid follicles and B cells in COPD is not yet unraveled. It is possible that lymphoid follicles arise from pulmonary infections and that they are essential to generate high affinity antibodies against pathogens. COPD patients with CB are more vulnerable for chronic pulmonary infections. As such, lymphoid follicles might develop as a consequence of CB. On the other hand they might produce antibodies against self-antigens or CS-derived neo-antigens as well. The oligoclonal nature of B cell proliferation in lymphoid follicles in COPD has repeatedly been observed <sup>242, 249</sup>. Moreover, several reports have described the presence of auto-antibodies in patients with COPD <sup>270-272</sup>. Interestingly, in a murine model of COPD, the presence of microbiota significantly increased the amount of auto-antibodies <sup>109</sup>. These studies suggest that lymphoid follicles might well be important in the persistence and progression of inflammation in COPD. In this light it is proposed that the enhanced BAFF production by B cells creates a self-perpetuating loop ensuring survival of B cells and expansion of lymphoid follicles <sup>219</sup>.

Aside from their essential role in humoral immunity, B cells are important regulators of T cell mediated immunity (**Figure 12**) <sup>273, 274</sup>. They do so by presenting antigen to T cells and are in this capacity especially useful when the amount of antigen is limited <sup>204, 274</sup>. Furthermore, upon stimulation by TLR-ligands or interaction with T cells, B cells produce cytokines that modulate the immune response as well <sup>275</sup>. Alongside modulation of the T cell response, polarization of macrophages is influenced by cytokine-producing B cells <sup>276, 277</sup>. *In vitro* stimulation with CS extract resulted in release of IL-10 by B cells and this

IL-10 stimulated macrophages to produce MMP12 <sup>276</sup>. Reports of the importance of B cell-derived cytokines in the pathogenesis of COPD are scarce, therefore requiring further investigation.



**Figure 12: B cell function.** Aside from antibody production, B cells produce a wide range of cytokines which regulate the immune response. Regulation of immune response includes dendritic cell and T cell regulation and lymphoid follicle formation. Furthermore, B cells are important professional antigen-presenting cells.

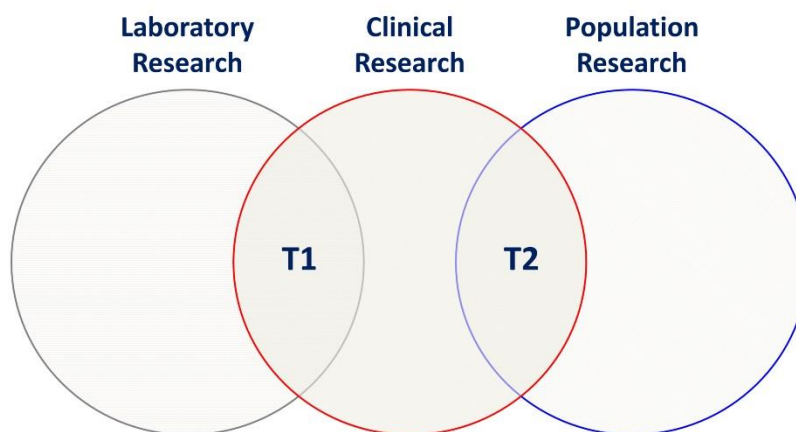
## PART I: INTRODUCTION

### CHAPTER 5: TRANSLATIONAL RESEARCH IN COPD: METHODS

## 5.1 TRANSLATIONAL RESEARCH IN COPD

Translating research from bench-to-bedside to expedite the search for new therapies is the ultimate goal of translational research (**Figure 13**). Using genetically manipulated mouse models, it is possible to research the importance of a single gene or molecule *in vivo*. In wild-type mice, administration of antibodies against a specific molecule can reveal specific functions of that molecule in a disease model. In our translational laboratory, a model has been optimized in which mice are exposed to CS to provoke the development of CS-induced hallmarks of COPD<sup>278</sup>. Results obtained in this murine model are confirmed by *ex vivo* studies on human lung samples.

Alongside the traditional from bench-to-bedside translation, a third research approach is used to study COPD: population-based research. Here, we use data from a large, prospective cohort study, the Rotterdam Study, to investigate the contribution of symptoms or co-morbidities to clinically important outcomes in subjects with COPD. Furthermore, the impact of having COPD on the vulnerability to other diseases is also studied.



**Figure 13: Translational research:** the intersection of laboratory research with clinical research (from bench-to-bedside) and the intersection with population-based research.



## 5.2 MURINE MODEL OF COPD

### 5.2.1 PROTOCOL

In order to elicit the hallmarks of COPD, mice are exposed to CS 4 times a day, with 30 minute smoke-free intervals and for 5 days a week. To administer the CS, mice are placed in a plexiglass chamber which is connected to a smoking apparatus and are subjected to the mainstream smoke of 5 simultaneously lit cigarettes. The plexiglass chamber is supplied with pressured air to obtain a smoke/air ratio of 1/6.

In this dissertation, exposure periods of 4, 8 and 24 weeks were used. Chronic CS exposure of 24 weeks allows investigation of lymphoid follicles and structural changes such as emphysema and airway wall remodeling<sup>278, 279</sup>. In experiments with shorter CS exposure terms, the main goal is to study inflammation.

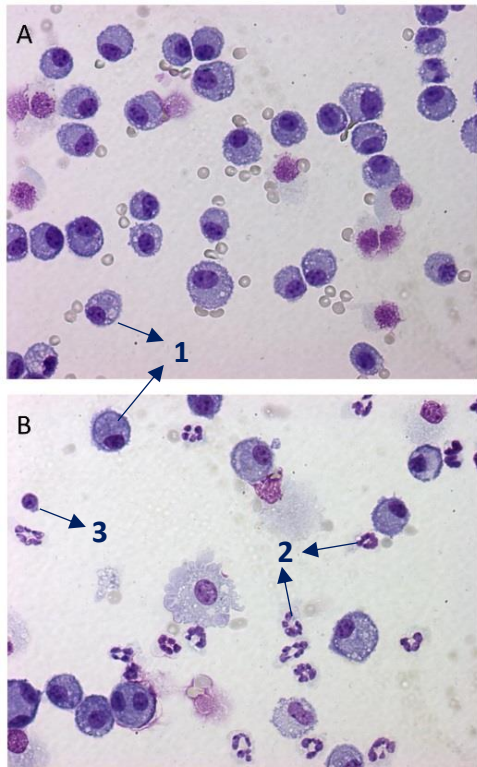
Experiment endpoints are performed 24 hours after the last CS exposure. Mice are weighed and sacrificed with an overdose of pentobarbital. Next, bronchoalveolar lavage (BAL) is performed and blood and lung tissue are collected. All *in vivo* manipulations were approved by the local Ethics Committee for animal experimentation of the Faculty of Medicine and Health Sciences.

### 5.2.2 ADVANTAGES AND LIMITATIONS OF THE CS-INDUCED MURINE MODEL OF COPD

A major advantage of CS-exposed mice as a model for COPD, is the use of the same etiologic agent as in the human disease. This adds to the relevance of this model compared to animal models which elicit COPD-like symptoms by instillation of 1 agent, for instance elastase and lipopolysaccharide. Furthermore, the use of mice has several advantages compared to other animals, in particular the relative low cost, the existence of hundreds of genetically modified strains and the availability of a substantial number of antibodies and gene sequences. As in patients with COPD, CS induces a neutrophilic inflammation in the airways of mice. Macrophages and CD8+ T cells are also increased in BAL and lung tissue of CS-exposed mice. As in humans, chronic CS exposure induces emphysematous lesions in lung parenchyma and remodeling of small airways in mice.

The most important limitations are the differences in anatomy (less bronchial generations, lack of respiratory bronchioli, submucosal glands are only present near the proximal tracheal rings and few to no goblet cells are present in the lower airways) and the lack of chronic bronchitis symptoms in response to CS. In addition, even after chronic CS exposure (6-8 months or longer), mice do not develop a disease resembling severe or very severe COPD. Finally, CS-exposed mice do not experience acute exacerbations which are a very important aspect of the human disease.

### 5.2.3 INFLAMMATION



By performing BAL, intra-luminal and alveolar inflammatory cells can be isolated. BAL cells are processed, resulting in cytopsins and cells labelled for flow cytometric analyses. Cytospins are cytocentrifuged preparations which are stained with May-Grünwald-Giemsa staining (**Figure 14**). At least 400 cells are counted to obtain a differential cell count.

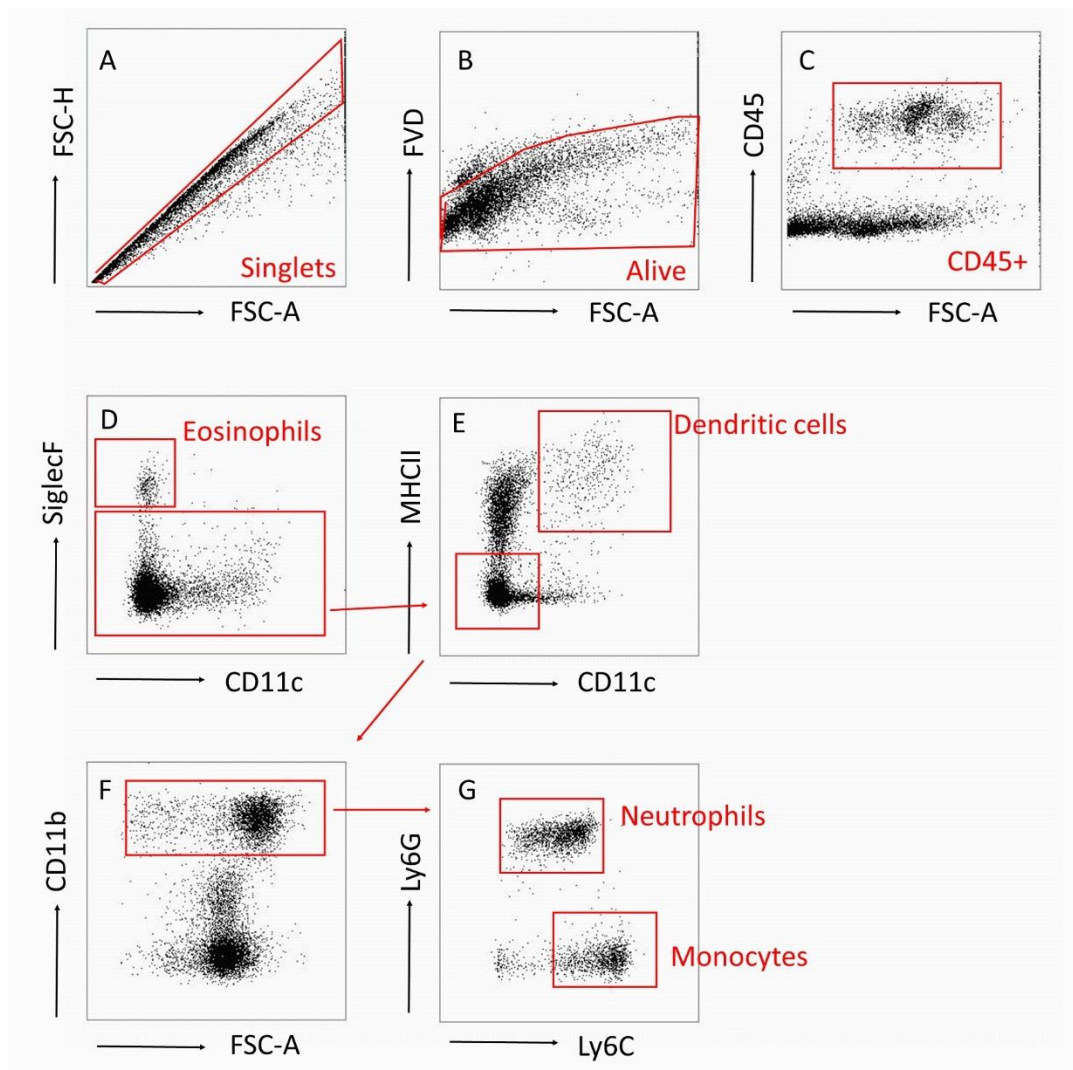
**Figure 14: Cytospins.**

A) Cytosin of cells isolated via bronchoalveolar lavage (BAL) of an air-exposed mouse. B) Cytosin of BAL cells of a CS-exposed mouse.

1 = macrophage, 2 = neutrophil, 3 = lymphocyte

By flow cytometric analyses of BAL cells, the percentage of macrophages, neutrophils, dendritic cells, B-lymphocytes and CD4+ and CD8+ T-lymphocytes is assessed. BAL supernatants are used for protein measurements by ELISA or Cytometric Bead Array.

Pulmonary inflammation is assessed by multiple methods. First, a single cell suspension is made of one lobe of the right lung. This single cell suspension is labelled to determine inflammatory cell percentages by flow cytometry (**Figure 15**). Second, a lobe of the right lung is suspended in RNA later and stored at -80°C to be processed for quantitative Real-Time Polymerase Chain Reaction (qRT-PCR). Third, the left lung is embedded in paraffin and subsequently fixed in formalin. Sections of the left lung are used for immunohistochemical stainings of several proteins. Additionally, mediastinal lymph nodes are processed to obtain single cell suspensions and are subsequently labeled for flow cytometric analyses.

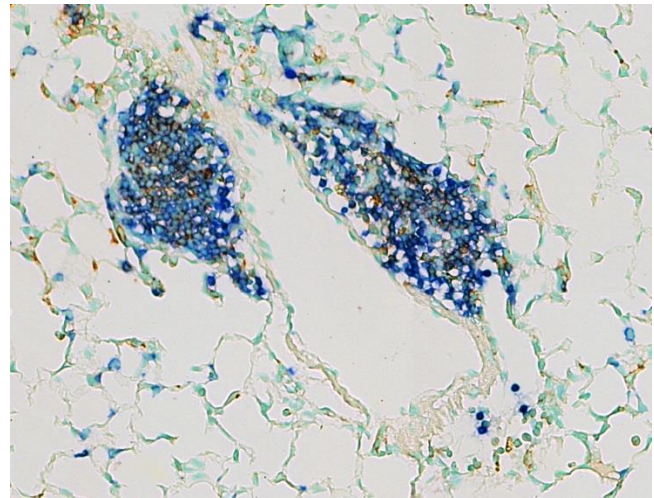


**Figure 15: Gating strategy for the characterisation of inflammatory cells (lung tissue).** A) Selection of single cells. B) FVD = Fixable Viability Dye; cells negative for this dye are alive. C) Selection of CD45+ cells (leukocytes). D) Eosinophils are characterised as SiglecF-positive and CD11c-negative. The rest fraction is further analysed. E) Dendritic cells are defined as CD45+, SiglecF-, MHCII+ and CD11c+. The MHCII- and CD11c- fraction is further analysed. F) Selection of the CD11b-positive cells. G) Neutrophils are characterized as CD45+, SiglecF-, MHCII- CD11c-, CD11b+, Ly6c ± and Ly6G+. Monocytes are CD45+, SiglecF-, MHCII-, CD11c-, CD11b+, Ly6G- and Ly6C+.

### 5.2.3 LYMPHOID FOLLICLE FORMATION

Localization and quantification of lymphoid follicles is based on immunohistochemical staining of CD3 (T cell marker)/B220 (B cell marker) on sections of the formalin-fixed, paraffin-embedded left lung (**Figure 16**)<sup>253</sup>.

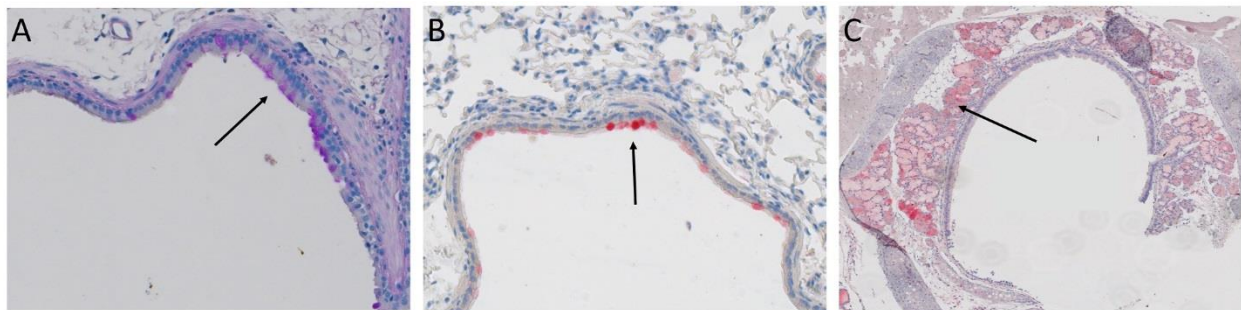
All lymphoid infiltrates in the proximity of airways and in the parenchyma are counted. Dense accumulations of at least 50 cells are defined as lymphoid follicles, whereas accumulations of less than 50 cells are defined as lymphoid aggregates. The number of infiltrates in the proximity of airways is normalized for the number of airways per lung section. Counts of infiltrates in the parenchyma are normalized for the area of lung parenchyma. All measurements are performed in a blinded fashion.



**Figure 16: Immunohistochemical staining of lymphoid follicles.** CD3 (brown): T cell marker, B220 (blue): B cell marker.

### 5.2.4 GOBLET CELL METAPLASIA

Goblet cell metaplasia is assessed by staining sections with Periodic acid-Schiff (PAS) (**Figure 17**). The number of goblet cells are counted with Axiovision software (Zeiss) and are expressed as the number of cells per millimeter basal membrane. Both major mucins in the airways, Muc5ac and Muc5b, have also been stained immunohistochemically on airways and trachea respectively (**Figure 17**). The gene expression of *Muc5ac* and *Muc5b* is quantified by qRT-PCR. All measurements are performed in a blinded fashion.



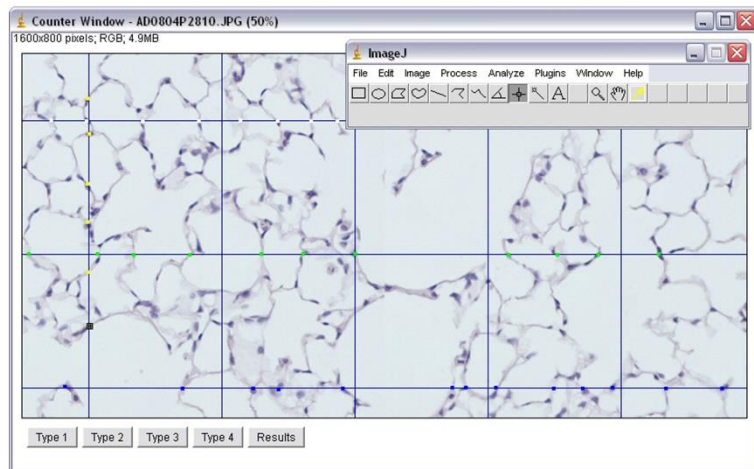
**Figure 17: Goblet cell metaplasia and mucin production.** A) Periodic acid-Schiff staining of a murine bronchus. B) Muc5AC immunohistochemical staining of a murine bronchus. C) Muc5B immunohistochemical staining of a murine trachea (positive staining in submucosal glands).



### 5.2.5 EMPHYSEMA

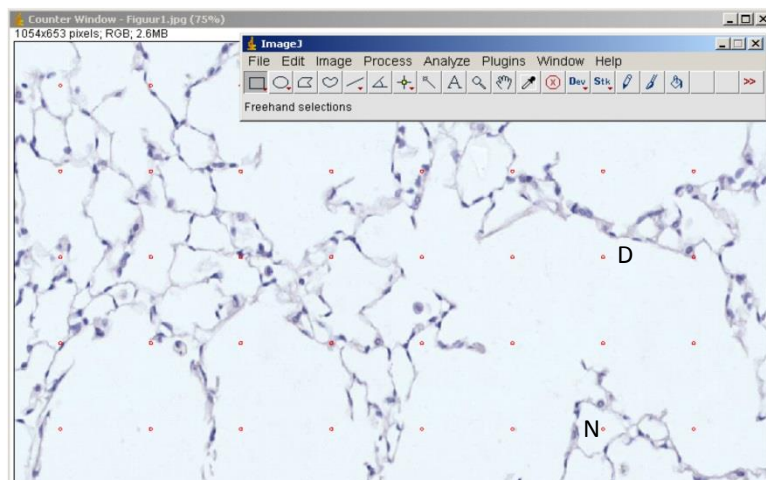
Airspace enlargement is determined on haematoxylin and eosin stained sections of the left lung by measuring the mean linear intercept ( $L_m$ ) (**Figure 18**)<sup>280</sup>. Using a Zeiss microscope, photomicrographs of the lung parenchyma are captured. Only images without artefacts, compression, blood vessels and airways are assessed. To measure the  $L_m$ , a 100 x 100  $\mu\text{m}$  grid is placed upon the photomicrographs of the parenchyma. Each intercept of alveolar wall with a line of the grid is counted and the total length of each line of the grid is divided by the total number of intercepts on that line. This results in an average distance between two alveolar walls, i.e. the  $L_m$ .

**Figure 18: Mean linear intercept ( $L_m$ ).** Using Image J software, a grid is placed over photomicrographs. Each intersection of an alveolar wall with a grid line is counted. The length of the grid lines divided by the number of intersections is the mean distance between alveolar walls.



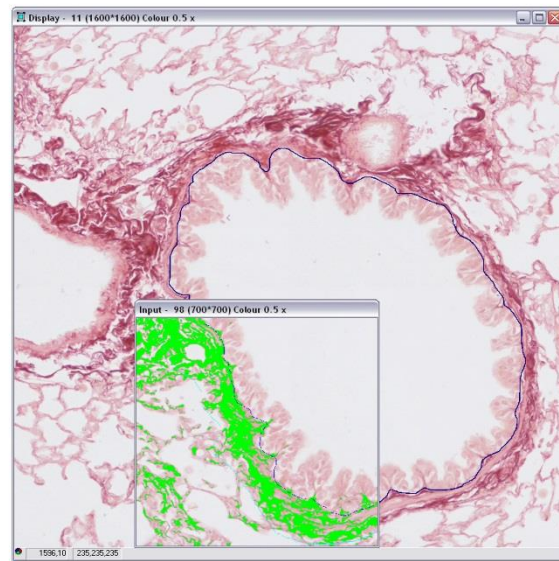
In addition, using the same photomicrographs, destruction of alveolar tissue is measured by the Destructive Index (DI) (**Figure 19**)<sup>281</sup>. For measurement of the DI a grid with 42 points is placed over the lung sections. For each point of the grid it is determined whether the structure underneath the point is normal (N) or destroyed (D). The DI is calculated as follows:  $DI = D/(D+N) \times 100$ . All measurements are performed in a blinded fashion.

**Figure 19: Destructive Index (DI).** Using Image J software, a grid of 42 points is placed over the photomicrographs. N = normal, D = destroyed.  $DI = D/(D+N) \times 100$



### 5.2.6 AIRWAY WALL REMODELING

Airway wall remodeling is assessed by measuring the deposition of collagen and fibronectin. Collagen is stained with Sirius Red, whereas fibronectin is stained immunohistochemically with anti-fibronectin antibody<sup>282</sup>. By using the Axiovision software, the area between the basal membrane and the adventitial perimeter that stains positive for collagen or fibronectin is calculated and normalized for the length of the basal membrane (**Figure 20**). All airways with a basal membrane length less than 2000  $\mu\text{m}$  and cut in reasonable cross sections are included in the analyses. All measurements are performed in a blinded fashion.



**Figure 20: Airway wall remodeling.** Quantification of collagen deposition (Sirius Red stain). The area positive for collagen is indicated in green in the small insert.

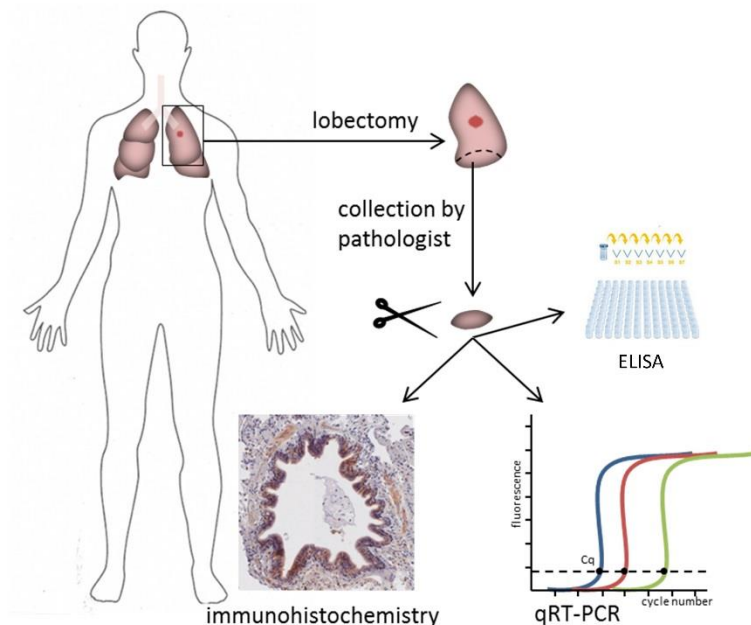
### 5.2.7 LUNG FUNCTION MEASUREMENTS

Lung function measurements are assessed using the Flexivent System (SCIREQ, Montreal, Canada). For baseline lung function measurements the 'snapshot' perturbation, the forced oscillation (Quick Prime 3) perturbation and pressure-volume loops are performed, so that static and dynamic compliance, resistance, elastance, total lung capacity and hysteresis are determined. Lung function measurements are performed on anaesthetized and tracheostomised mice, which received a neuromuscular blocker (pancuronium bromide (1mg/kg)).

### 5.3 HUMAN STUDIES

*Ex vivo* studies are performed on human lung tissue from patients undergoing lung resection surgery at the Ghent University Hospital. Diagnosis of COPD and severity assessment is made based on pre-operative spirometry according to the GOLD classification <sup>2</sup>. All participants provide a written informed consent according to protocols approved by the medical ethical committee of the Ghent University Hospital. Exclusion criteria for participation are treatment with neo-adjuvant chemotherapy, tuberculosis, recent COPD exacerbations and recent pulmonary infections. All participants are interviewed on their smoking habits and medication use. Ex-smokers are defined as having quit for at least one year.

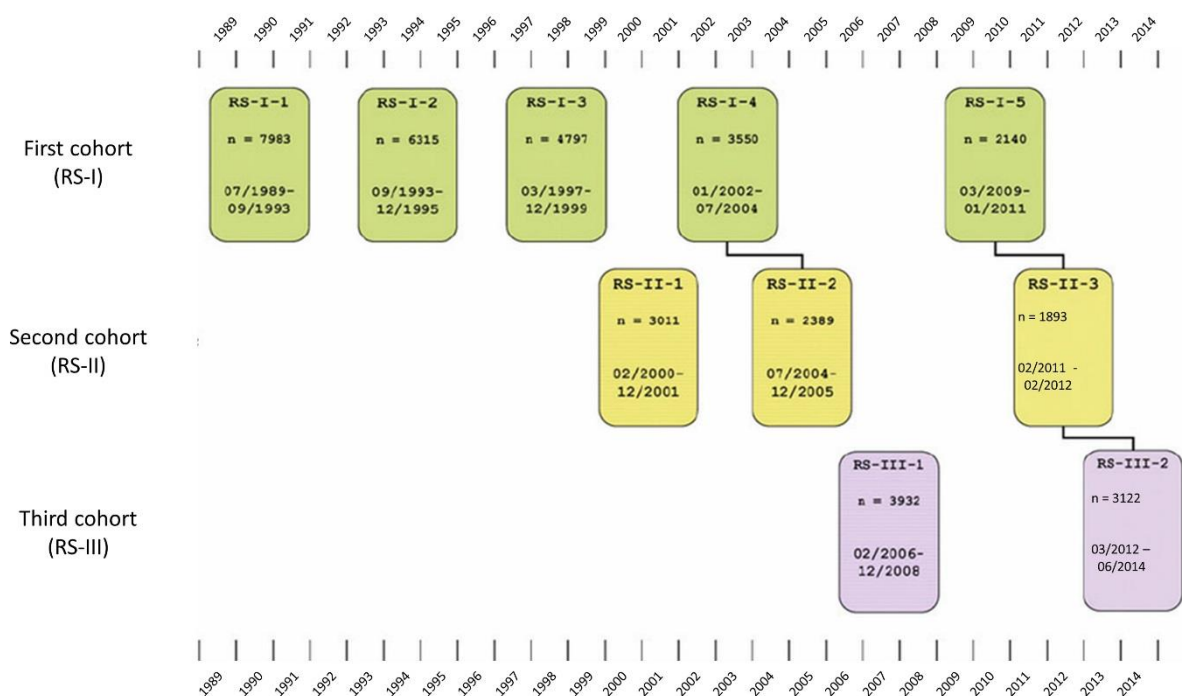
Lung tissue is collected by a pathologist at maximum distance from the pulmonary lesions and without signs of retro-obstructive pneumonia or tumor invasion. Small pieces of the resection samples are submersed in RNA-later and stored at -80°C until RNA extraction and subsequent qRT-PCR analyses. In addition, tissue blocks from the resection samples are snap-frozen in liquid nitrogen and stored at -80°C. This tissue is used for protein detection by ELISA. A final set of tissue blocks are fixed in paraformaldehyde and embedded in paraffin. Sections of these blocks are used for immunohistochemical staining (**Figure 21**).



**Figure 21: Protocol for the collection of human lung tissue.** Lung tissue from resection surgery is collected by a pathologist. This tissue is used for immunohistochemical analyses of proteins, qRT-PCR analyses of mRNA expression and protein measurement via ELISA. Adapted from F. Verhamme.

## 5.4 THE ROTTERDAM STUDY

In order to investigate the impact of chronic bronchitis on clinically important outcomes in subjects with COPD, we analyzed data from the Rotterdam Study (**Figure 22**). This is a large, prospective, population-based study, situated in the city of Rotterdam, the Netherlands. The study started in 1990 when all residents from the district of Ommoord, aged 55 or older, were invited to participate (first cohort). In 2000 and in 2006, residents who had become 55 and 45 years respectively, were invited to join the study (second and third cohort). Follow-up examinations occur approximately every 4 to 5 years. Data is collected from home interviews and a set of physical examinations performed in a designated research building. In addition, medical and pharmacy records are linked to the study <sup>283</sup>.



**Figure 22: The Rotterdam Study.** The green blocks represent examination cycles of the first cohort which enrolled in 1989-1993. The second cohort was asked to participate in 2000 and the examination cycles of this cohort is represented by yellow blocks. A third cohort was enrolled in 2006 and they have been invited for an examination twice, represented by the two purple blocks. Adapted from Hofman et al. *Eur J Epidemiol.* 2015;30(8)661-708 <sup>278</sup>.



## PART II: RESEARCH WORK

### CHAPTER 6: RESEARCH OBJECTIVES

## RESEARCH OBJECTIVES

Worldwide, COPD affects more than 200 million people, imposing a huge burden of disease. Noxious particles and gases entering the airways cause the characteristic airway inflammation, mucus hypersecretion, airway wall remodelling and emphysema in susceptible individuals. The pathogenesis of COPD is multifaceted and not fully understood. Bearing in mind that there is currently no cure for COPD, an improved comprehension of the pathogenesis could aid in the search for new therapeutic targets. In this research we have applied a **translational approach** combining functional studies in **murine models** with *ex vivo* studies on **human lung resection tissue** and **population-based research** embedded in the Rotterdam Study.

We aimed to investigate **the role of mucociliary dysfunction in COPD** in two separate studies. Mucociliary impairment arises primarily from dehydration of the airway surface, originating either from excess production of mucins and non-mucin proteins, dysfunction of ion channels or both.

First, **the role of airway surface dehydration in the pathogenesis of COPD** has not been determined *in vivo*. Therefore, we studied the effect of airway surface dehydration on the hallmarks of COPD in  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice, a **mouse model for airway surface dehydration**, and exposed these mice and their wild-type littermates to air or CS.

**Research question 1: Does airway surface dehydration aggravate cigarette smoke-induced inflammation and structural changes in a mouse model of COPD?**

Next, airway surface dehydration is associated with chronic bronchitis and increases the risk for airway infections. In addition, airway infections are a major cause of COPD exacerbations. Therefore, we wondered whether subjects with COPD and concomitant chronic bronchitis exhibit an increased risk for exacerbations and mortality, two clinically relevant outcomes. Since literature renders inconsistent reports on this subject, we aimed to investigate **the exacerbation and mortality risk in COPD subjects with and without chronic bronchitis** in a large prospective **population-based** cohort, the Rotterdam Study.

**Research question 2: Does the presence of chronic bronchitis affect the exacerbation and mortality risk in subjects with COPD?**

We also used a translational approach to continue our research on the role of B cell-rich lymphoid follicles in COPD, by investigating **the role of B cell activating factor (BAFF) in the pathogenesis of COPD**. In COPD, an increased number of B cells and airways with lymphoid follicles are associated with disease severity. In addition, the level of BAFF in these lymphoid follicles is associated with disease severity as well. We hypothesised that the presence of BAFF and B cells contributes to the pathological hallmarks of COPD. For this research, we investigated the functional **role of BAFF in a mouse model of CS-induced pathology**. Furthermore, we aimed to investigate the expression of **BAFF in patients with COPD** compared to control patients and the localisation of BAFF within lymphoid follicles in patients with COPD.

**Research question 3: Does antagonizing B cell activating factor attenuate the hallmarks of cigarette smoke-induced pulmonary disease in a murine model of COPD?**



## PART II: RESEARCH WORK

### CHAPTER 7: AIRWAY SURFACE DEHYDRATION AGGRAVATES CIGARETTE SMOKE-INDUCED HALLMARKS OF COPD IN MICE

Imbalance of ion secretion and absorption contributes to airway surface dehydration which leads to mucociliary dysfunction. Research shows that airway surface dehydration is present in smokers with and without COPD. However, the role of airway surface dehydration in the pathogenesis of COPD has not been studied *in vivo*.

**Seys LJ**, Verhamme FM, Dupont LL, Desauter E, Duerr J, Seyhan Agircan A, Conickx G, Joos GF, Brusselle GG, Mall MA, Bracke KR. Airway Surface Dehydration Aggravates Cigarette Smoke-Induced Hallmarks of COPD in Mice. *PLoS one* 2015; 10: e0129897 <sup>284</sup>.

**ABSTRACT**

**Introduction:** Airway surface dehydration, caused by an imbalance between secretion and absorption of ions and fluid across the epithelium and/or increased epithelial mucin secretion, impairs mucociliary clearance. Recent evidence suggests that this mechanism may be implicated in chronic obstructive pulmonary disease (COPD). However, the role of airway surface dehydration in the pathogenesis of cigarette smoke (CS)-induced COPD remains unknown.

**Objective:** We aimed to investigate *in vivo* the effect of airway surface dehydration on several CS-induced hallmarks of COPD in mice with airway-specific overexpression of the  $\beta$ -subunit of the epithelial Na<sup>+</sup> channel ( $\beta$ ENaC).

**Methods:**  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice and wild-type (WT) littermates were exposed to air or CS for 4 or 8 weeks. Pathological hallmarks of COPD, including goblet cell metaplasia, mucin expression, pulmonary inflammation, lymphoid follicles, emphysema and airway wall remodelling were determined and lung function was measured.

**Results:** Airway surface dehydration in  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice aggravated CS-induced airway inflammation, mucin expression and destruction of alveolar walls and accelerated the formation of pulmonary lymphoid follicles. Moreover, lung function measurements demonstrated an increased compliance and total lung capacity and a lower resistance and hysteresis in  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice, compared to WT mice. CS exposure further altered lung function measurements.

**Conclusions:** We conclude that airway surface dehydration is a risk factor that aggravates CS-induced hallmarks of COPD.

## INTRODUCTION

Efficient mucociliary clearance is an essential innate defence mechanism of the lung<sup>40, 125, 126, 146</sup>. Although ciliary activity and mucus secretion play an important role in airway mucus clearance, evidence from biophysical studies indicates that the hydration state of the airway surface is the key determinant<sup>138, 285</sup>. While airway surface dehydration is a well-established disease mechanism in cystic fibrosis<sup>176, 285</sup>, recent research suggests that this abnormality may also play a role in chronic obstructive pulmonary disease (COPD)<sup>157, 160, 161, 166</sup>. Pathologically, COPD is mainly caused by cigarette smoking and characterized by mucus obstruction of the small airways<sup>44</sup>, chronic pulmonary inflammation, obstructive bronchiolitis and emphysema<sup>38, 286</sup>.

Several studies demonstrated that cigarette smoke (CS) has detrimental effects on the hydration of airway surfaces. First, it was shown that CS affects ion channels in the apical membrane of airway epithelial cells, thereby disturbing the balance between Na<sup>+</sup> absorption and Cl<sup>-</sup> secretion and leading to airway surface dehydration. Most notably, CS induces an acquired deficiency of the cystic fibrosis transmembrane conductance regulator (CFTR), a crucial cAMP-dependent Cl<sup>-</sup> channel that is mutated in cystic fibrosis<sup>157, 161, 166</sup>. In chronic smokers, CFTR function is reduced to ~ 45% of normal and mucus is hyperconcentrated *in vivo*<sup>157, 161</sup>. This acquired CFTR dysfunction contributes to inadequate mucociliary transport<sup>166</sup> and is associated with chronic bronchitis and dyspnoea in smokers with and without COPD<sup>162</sup>. Furthermore, exposure to CS extract enhances the activity of the epithelial Na<sup>+</sup> channel (ENaC) in alveolar type I and type II cells<sup>167</sup>, suggesting that CS exposure results in a hyposecretory/hyperabsorptive ion transport phenotype. Along these lines, recent studies on the protein levels of CFTR and ENaC in lung tissue of COPD patients demonstrated that CFTR levels were positively correlated with lung function, whereas levels of  $\alpha$ - and  $\beta$ ENaC showed a negative correlation with lung function<sup>287</sup>. In mice, an imbalance between Na<sup>+</sup> absorption and Cl<sup>-</sup> secretion, has been achieved in  $\beta$ ENaC transgenic ( $\beta$ ENaC-Tg) mice. In these mice, airway-specific overexpression of  $\beta$ ENaC causes constitutive airway surface dehydration and spontaneous chronic obstructive lung disease characterized by airway mucus obstruction, neutrophilic inflammation and development of emphysema early in life<sup>176, 177</sup>.

A second mechanism by which CS can contribute to airway surface dehydration, is the CS-induced mucin hypersecretion<sup>38, 40, 160</sup>. The two major secreted mucins in airways, MUC5AC and MUC5B, are both increased in patients with COPD<sup>130, 288, 289</sup>. These mucin macromolecules are secreted in a dry form and thus increase the concentration of the mucus gel layer if the availability of airway surface fluid is limited. In their gel-on-brush model, Button *et al.* recently showed that an increased concentration of mucins

causes an increase in the osmotic pressure of the mucus gel layer and, above a certain threshold, this causes a compression of the subjacent periciliary layer, leading to a collapse of the cilia and mucostasis<sup>138</sup>. Since observational evidence indicates that there is a degree of airway surface dehydration in patients with COPD, this study aimed to investigate the *in vivo* effect of airway surface dehydration on several pathological hallmarks of COPD and on lung function. To achieve this goal, we exposed  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice and wild-type (WT) littermates to air or CS for 4 or 8 weeks and determined mucin expression, goblet cell metaplasia, pulmonary inflammation, lymphoid follicles, pulmonary emphysema and airway wall remodelling, and measured lung function.



## METHODS

Details of materials and methods used can be found in the online supplement.

### *Primary tracheal epithelial cultures*

For each experiment, freshly excised tracheae were collected and pooled from 10 mice per group. Epithelial cells were isolated and cultured on membranes (T-Col, Costar, Cambridge, MA) under air-liquid interface conditions as described previously<sup>290</sup>, and cultures were studied after reaching confluence (14 days).

### *Measurement of airway surface liquid height*

Primary tracheal epithelial cultures were washed with PBS, and 20  $\mu$ l of PBS containing 2 mg/ml Rhodamine dextran (10 kDa; Molecular Probes) was added to the lumen to visualize the airway surface liquid layer. To avoid evaporation of the ASL, 80  $\mu$ l of immiscible perfluorocarbon (Fluorinert-77, Sigma-Aldrich) was added to the airway surface following the addition of the labeling dye. Images of the Rhodamine-labeled airway surface liquid were acquired by confocal microscopy (Leica TCS SP8, Leica Microsystems, Mannheim, Germany). The height of the airway surface liquid was measured by averaging the heights obtained from xz scans of sixteen predetermined positions on the culture as previously described<sup>290</sup>. Airway surface liquid height was measured 5 min following the addition of the Rhodamine dextran and at designated time points over a period of 24 h in primary tracheal epithelial cultures from  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice and WT littermates.

### *Animals*

Male  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice, backcrossed onto the C57Bl/6 background<sup>178</sup>, were mated with female C57Bl/6Cr1 wild-type (WT) mice (Charles River). All mice were bred in the animal facility of the Ghent University Hospital and housed in filtertop cages in standard conditions under a 12 h light-dark cycle and provided with a standard diet (Pavan, Brussels, Belgium) and chlorinated tap water *ad libitum*. Mice were euthanized with an overdose of pentobarbital (Sanofi, Libourne, France). All *in vivo* manipulations were approved by the local Ethics Committee for animal experimentation of the Faculty of Medicine and Health Sciences (Ghent University).

### *Cigarette smoke exposure*

Groups of 8 to 11  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice and WT littermates were exposed whole body to cigarette smoke as described before (a total of 120 mice was used)<sup>257</sup>. In short, mice were exposed 5 days a week to the mainstream cigarette smoke of 5 cigarettes (Reference cigarette 3R4F without filter, University of

Kentucky, Lexington, KY, USA), 4 times a day with a 30 minute smoke free interval between exposures. A standard smoking apparatus was used with the smoking chamber adapted for a group of mice. A smoke/air ratio of 1/6 was obtained. Control mice were exposed to room air. CS exposure started at an age of 7-8 weeks and the exposure period was either 4 or 8 weeks.

#### *$\beta$ ENaC immunohistochemistry*

Lung sections were evaluated for overexpression of the  $\beta$ -subunit of ENaC, using a rabbit polyclonal anti- $\beta$ ENaC antibody <sup>291</sup>.

#### *Goblet cell analysis and mucin gene expression*

Transversal sections were made from the paraffin-embedded left lung and were stained with Periodic acid-Schiff (PAS). Goblet cells were counted using Axiovision software (Zeiss) and were expressed as number of cells per millimetre basal membrane. Expression of Muc5ac and Muc5b was quantified by quantitative real-time polymerase chain reaction (qRT-PCR).

#### *Pulmonary inflammation*

Bronchoalveolar lavage (BAL) fluid was collected via a tracheal cannula. Differential cell counts of the lavage fluid were obtained by cytocentrifuged preparations after May-Grünwald-Giemsa staining. Flow cytometric analysis was used for quantifying inflammatory cell types in BAL fluid and single cell suspensions of lung tissue <sup>257, 292, 293</sup>. qRT-PCR was used to evaluate the expression of several chemokines. The protein levels of Cxcl1 and Ccl20 in BAL fluid supernatant of mice were determined with an ELISA kit (R&D systems).

#### *Lymphoid follicles*

In order to quantify lymphoid follicles, defined as dense accumulations of at least 50 lymphocytes, paraffin-embedded sections of the left lung were immunohistochemically stained with anti-CD3 (Dako) and anti-B220 (BD biosciences) <sup>253</sup>. The number of follicles was normalized for the total area of parenchyma that was scored.

#### *Emphysema*

In order to evaluate pulmonary emphysema, two complementary methods were used, the mean linear intercept (Lm) and the destructive index (DI). The Lm is a measurement of alveolar space enlargement whereas the DI is a calculation of the percentage of destroyed alveolar walls. Both analyses were performed using the Image J software on haematoxylin and eosin (H&E) stained lung sections.

### *Airway wall remodelling*

To evaluate the deposition of fibronectin and collagen, paraffin-embedded sections of the left lung were used for immunohistological staining. Fibronectin was stained with mouse anti-fibronectin (Thermo-Scientific). Collagen was stained chemically with Sirius Red. The amount of collagen and fibronectin in the airway wall was quantified using the Axiovision software (Zeiss).

### *Lung function measurements*

Using the Flexivent System (SCIREQ, Montreal, Canada), baseline lung function was examined invasively in tracheostomised anaesthetized mice <sup>294</sup>. The jugular vein was used to administer pancuronium bromide (1 mg/kg) (Inresa, Freiburg, Germany), which induces a neuromuscular blockade. The mice were ventilated with an average breathing frequency of 150 breaths/minute. Once the mice were stable, resistance (R) and dynamic compliance ( $C_{dyn}$ ) were measured using a 'snapshot perturbation' manoeuvre. The forced oscillation perturbation (Quick Prime 3) was applied to assess the tissue damping (G). Pressure-volume (PV) loops were generated to measure the static compliance ( $C_{stat}$ ), total lung capacity (TLC) and hysteresis.

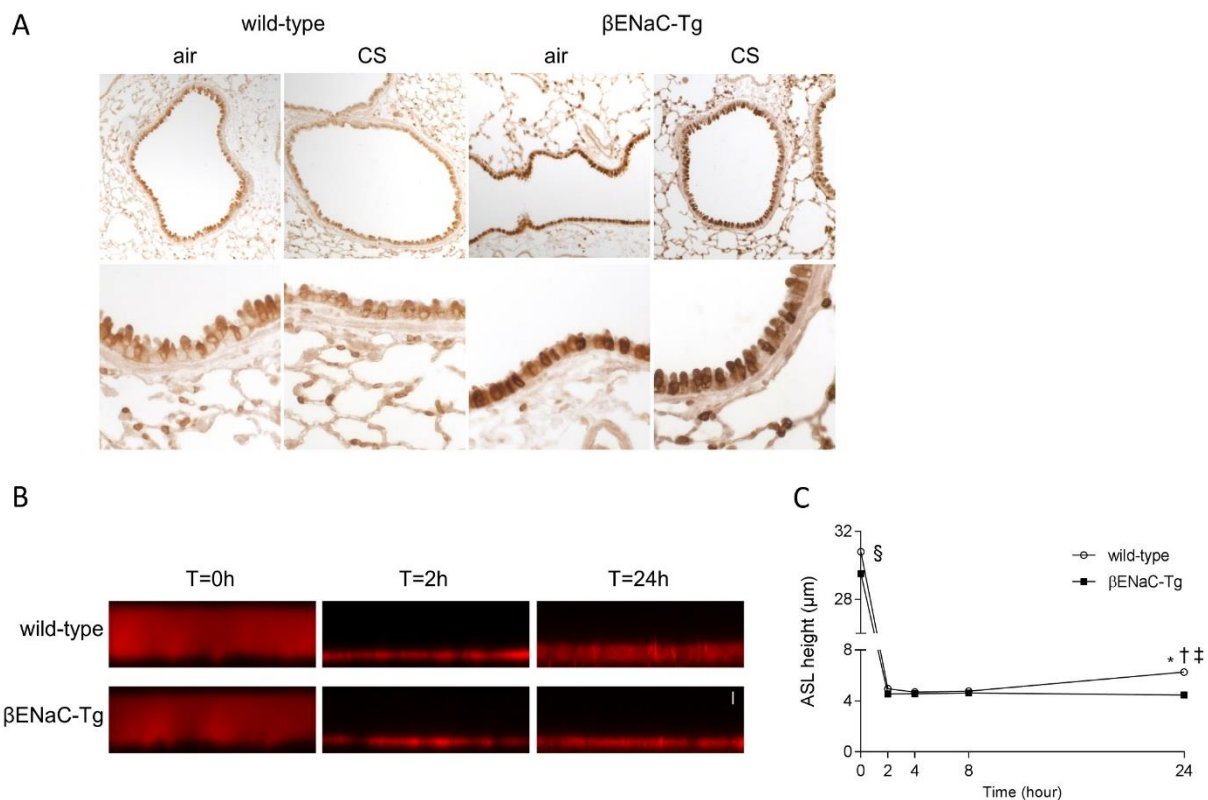
### *Statistical analyses*

Sigma Stat Software (SPSS 21.0, Chicago, IL, USA) was used to perform non-parametric tests (Kruskal-Wallis and Mann-Whitney-U). Reported values are expressed as mean  $\pm$  SEM. P-values < 0.05 were considered to be significant.

## RESULTS

### *Overexpression of $\beta$ ENaC and reduced airway surface liquid height in $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice*

To confirm the overexpression of the  $\beta$ -subunit of ENaC in  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice, we performed an immunohistochemical staining for  $\beta$ ENaC on lung tissue sections from WT and  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice.  $\beta$ ENaC-positive cells were readily detected in conducting airways and alveoli in lungs of WT mice (**Fig. 1 A**). The intensity of the immunoreactive signal was substantially stronger in airways from  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg compared to WT mice, consistent with a marked increase in  $\beta$ ENaC protein in epithelial cells (**Fig. 1 A**).



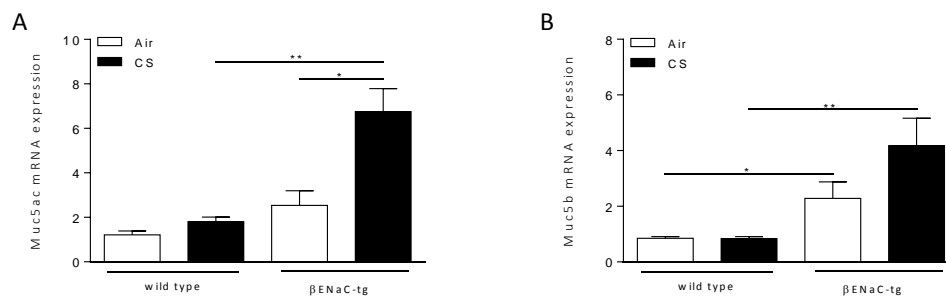
**Figure 1. Overexpression of  $\beta$ ENaC and reduced airway surface liquid height in  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice.**

Immunolocalization of  $\beta$ ENaC in airways from WT and  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice. (A) Representative images of  $\beta$ ENaC immunostaining of lung sections from WT and  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice that were exposed to air or CS for 8 weeks.  $n = 5$  per group. Dysregulation of steady state airway surface liquid (ASL) height on airway epithelia from  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice under thin film conditions. Representative confocal images (B) and summary of measurements of airway surface liquid height (C) at  $t = 0, 2, 4, 8$  and  $24$ h after mucosal addition of  $20 \mu\text{l}$  of PBS containing Rhodamine dextran to primary tracheal epithelial cultures from  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice and WT littermates. Scale bar,  $7 \mu\text{m}$ .  $n = 4$  experiments per group. \* $p < 0.001$  compared to  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg; § $p < 0.001$  for  $t = 0$ h compared to all other time points within the same genotype; † $p < 0.05$  for  $t = 24$ h wild-type compared to  $t = 2$ h wild-type; ‡ $p < 0.005$  for  $t = 24$ h wild-type compared to  $t = 4$ h and  $8$ h wild-type.

To determine the effects of  $\beta$ ENaC overexpression on the regulation of airway surface liquid, primary tracheal epithelial cell cultures of WT and  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice grown at an air-liquid-interface were challenged with a small volume of liquid added to the luminal compartment. Airway surface liquid height was monitored sequentially by confocal microscopy over a period of 24h. Within 2h after the initial volume challenge, the airway surface liquid was absorbed to a height of  $\sim 4.5 \mu\text{m}$  in both WT and  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice (**Fig. 1 B-C**). However, at 24h, airway surface liquid height increased to  $\sim 6.3 \mu\text{m}$  in airway cultures from WT mice, whereas it remained significantly reduced in  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice (**Fig. 1 B-C**). Consistent with previous studies<sup>290</sup>, these results demonstrate that  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg airway epithelia fail to regulate airway surface liquid to normal levels, and that steady state airway surface liquid is reduced in  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg compared to WT mice.

*Cigarette smoke-induced mucin expression is aggravated in  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice*

The expression of Muc5ac and Muc5b was quantified in total lung tissue by qRT-PCR. The airway surface dehydration in air-exposed  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice resulted in a higher expression of both Muc5ac and Muc5b, compared to WT mice (**Fig. 2 A-B**). Four weeks of CS exposure significantly increased the expression of Muc5ac in  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice, but not in WT mice (**Fig. 2 A**). In contrast, CS exposure did not induce a significant upregulation of Muc5b expression in lung, neither in  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice nor in WT mice (**Fig. 2 B**). Similar results were obtained after 8 weeks of CS exposure (**Suppl. Fig. S1**).



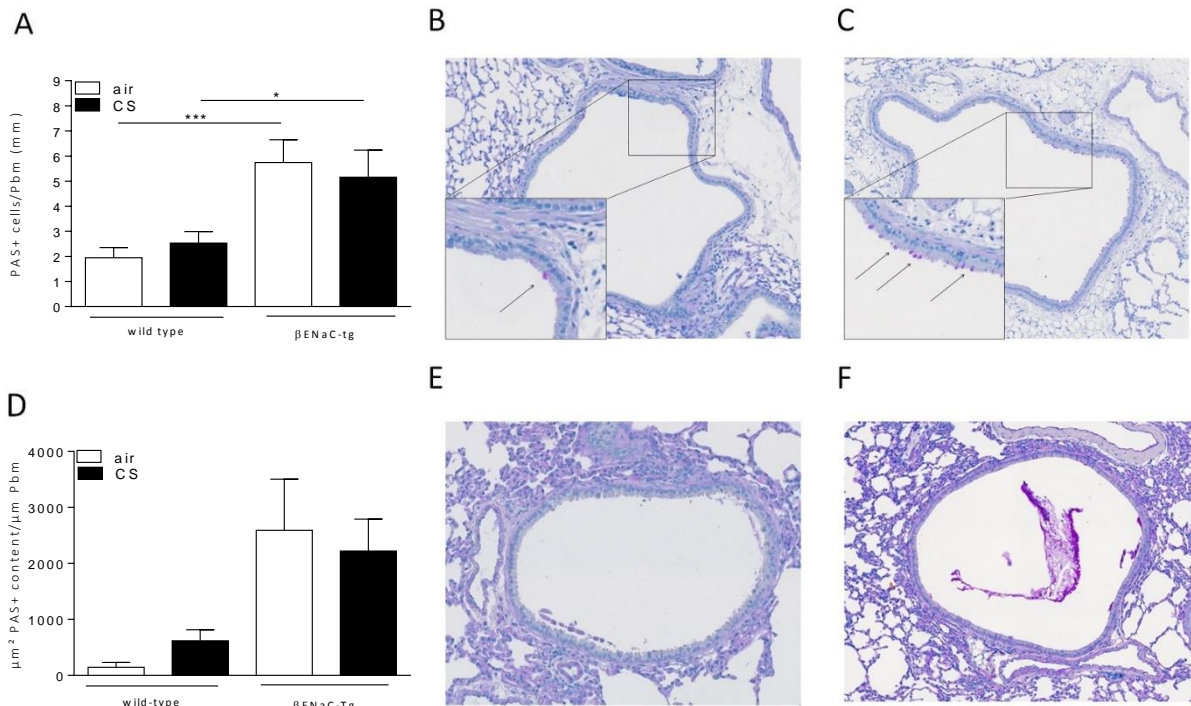
**Figure 2. Cigarette smoke-induced mucin expression is increased in  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice.**

mRNA expression of Muc5ac (A) and Muc5b (B) in total lung tissue upon 4 weeks of air or CS exposure. mRNA expression data were normalized for 3 reference genes (Hprt1, Gapdh, Tfrc). n = 6/group

\*p<0.05, \*\*p<0.01, \*\*\*p<0.001

Goblet cell metaplasia was assessed by quantifying the number of periodic-acid-Schiff positive (PAS+) cells in the bronchial epithelium. Air-exposed  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice had higher numbers of PAS+ cells compared to WT mice. However, 4 weeks of CS exposure did not induce an increase in PAS+ cells, neither in WT nor in

$\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice (**Fig. 3 A-C**). In a subgroup of animals (n=3/group), PAS+ mucus content was measured in the airway lumen of non-lavaged mice following 4 weeks of air or CS exposure. Similar to goblet cell metaplasia, there was more mucus present in the airway lumen of  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice, compared to WT controls independent of CS exposure (**Fig. 3 D-F**). Quantification of goblet cell metaplasia after 8 weeks of CS exposure, resulted in a similar outcome (**Suppl. Fig. S1**)



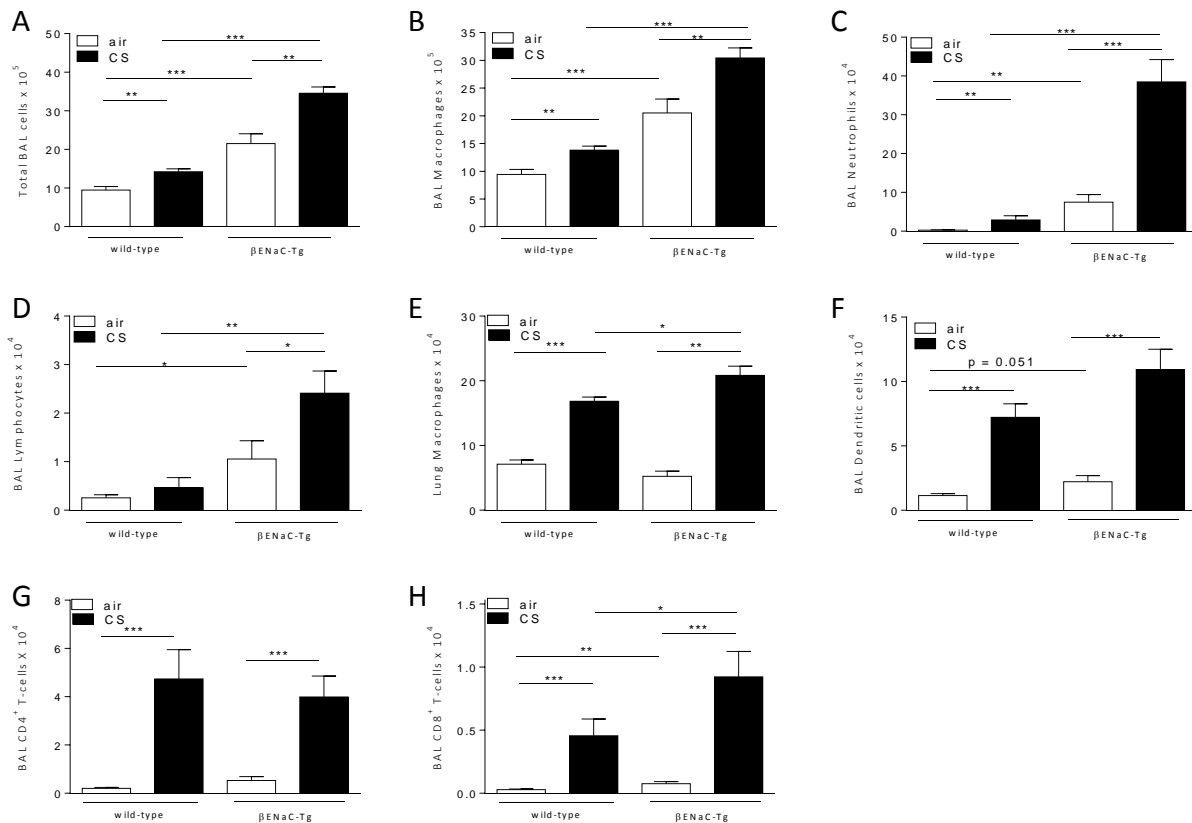
**Figure 3. Goblet cell metaplasia and mucus secretion upon air or CS exposure.**

(A) Goblet cell count upon 4 weeks of air or CS exposure. n=8/group. Representative images of goblet cells in airways of CS-exposed WT mice (B) and CS-exposed  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice (C) upon 4 weeks of CS exposure. Arrows indicate goblet cells. (D) Quantification of PAS+ mucus content in lumen of airways of non-lavaged mice upon 4 weeks of air or CS exposure n=3/group. Representative image of PAS+ mucus content in airways of CS-exposed WT mice (E) and CS-exposed  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice (F). \*p<0.05, \*\*p<0.01, \*\*\*p<0.001

#### *Cigarette smoke-induced pulmonary inflammation is aggravated in $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice*

Following air exposure, the numbers of inflammatory cells in BAL fluid were significantly increased in  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg compared to WT mice. Four weeks of CS exposure led to a significant increase in the number of total BAL cells, macrophages, neutrophils and lymphocytes, both in WT and  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice (**Fig. 4 A-D**). Importantly, this increase in innate and adaptive immune cells was significantly higher in  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice, compared to WT mice (**Fig. 4 A-D**). Additionally, 4 weeks of CS exposure significantly increased the number

of macrophages in the lungs of  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg and WT mice (**Fig. 4 E**), but had no effect on the number of neutrophils, dendritic cells and CD4+ and CD8+ T-lymphocytes (data not shown). Interestingly, the CS-induced increase in macrophages in lung tissue was aggravated in  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice, compared to WT controls (**Fig. 4 E**).



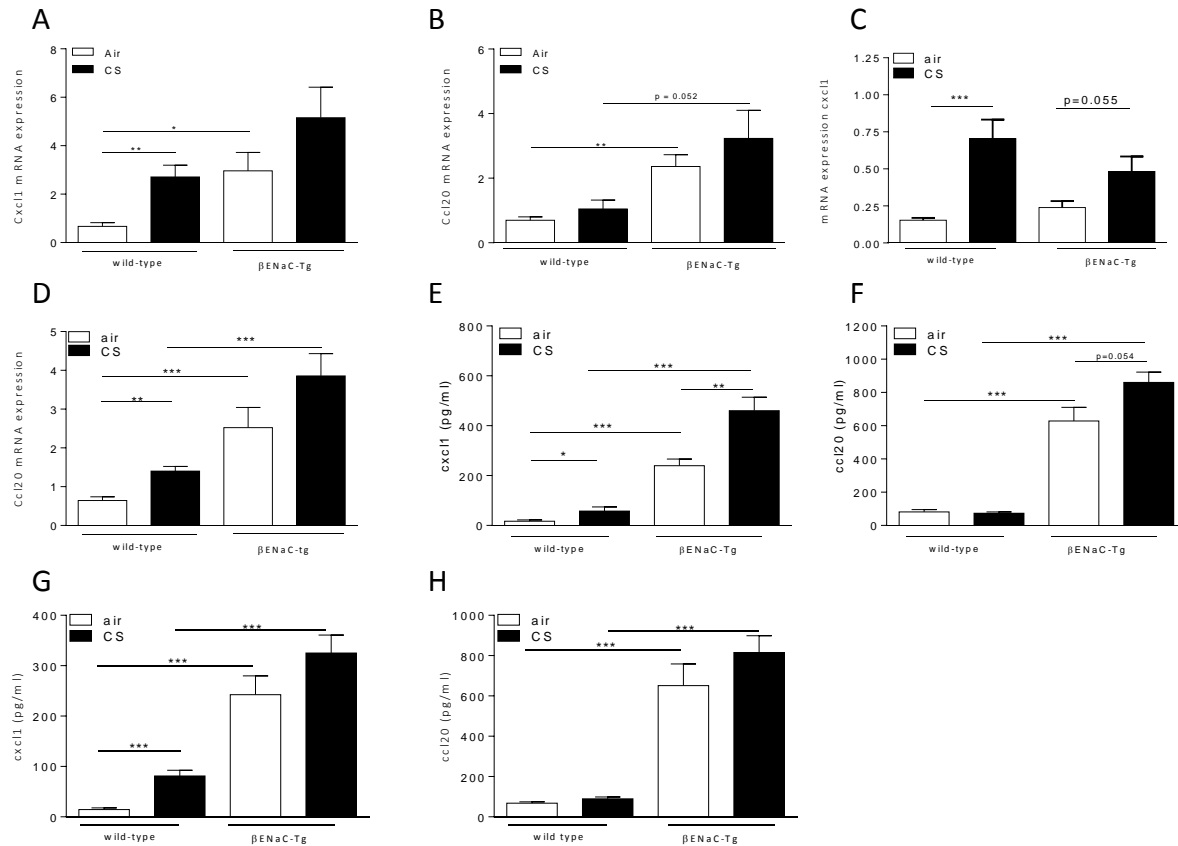
**Figure 4. Cigarette smoke-induced pulmonary inflammation is increased in  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice.**

(A) Total inflammatory cell count in BAL upon 4 weeks of air or CS exposure. Quantification of macrophages (B), neutrophils (C) and lymphocytes (D) in BAL upon 4 weeks of air or CS exposure.  $n = 7-8/\text{group}$ . (E) Quantification of macrophages in total lung after 4 weeks of CS exposure.  $n = 7-8/\text{group}$ . Quantification of dendritic cells (F), CD4+ T-lymphocytes (G) and CD8+ T-lymphocytes (H) in BAL upon 8 weeks of air or CS exposure.  $n = 8-11/\text{group}$ . \* $p < 0.05$ , \*\* $p < 0.01$ , \*\*\* $p < 0.001$

Similar results were obtained after 8 weeks of CS exposure (**Suppl. Fig. S2**). Following 8 weeks of CS exposure, additional cell types were quantified. While the CS-induced increase in dendritic cells and CD4+ T-lymphocytes in BAL did not differ in WT and  $\beta$ -ENaC (**Fig. 4 F-H**), the increase in CD8+ T-lymphocytes was significantly aggravated in CS-exposed  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice, compared to WT littermates (**Fig. 4 H**).

Quantification of inflammatory chemokines revealed higher mRNA expression of Cxcl1 and Ccl20 in lung tissue of air-exposed  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice, compared to WT littermates (**Fig. 5 A-D**). The CS-induced increase in

pulmonary Ccl20 mRNA expression was aggravated in  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice, especially upon 8 weeks of CS exposure (**Fig. 5 A-D**). Protein levels of Cxcl1 and Ccl20 in BAL fluid were significantly higher in  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice, compared to WT littermates (Fig. 5 E-H). Moreover, the CS-induced increase in Cxcl1 protein levels in BAL was significantly aggravated in  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice (**Fig. 5 E**).



**Figure 5. mRNA expression and protein levels of chemokines upon air or CS exposure.**

mRNA expression of Cxcl1 in total lung tissue upon 4 weeks (A) and 8 weeks (C) air or CS exposure. mRNA expression of Ccl20 in total lung tissue upon 4 weeks (B) and 8 weeks (D) air or CS exposure. mRNA expression data were normalized for 3 reference genes (Hprt1, Gapdh, Tfrc). n = 6-8/group.

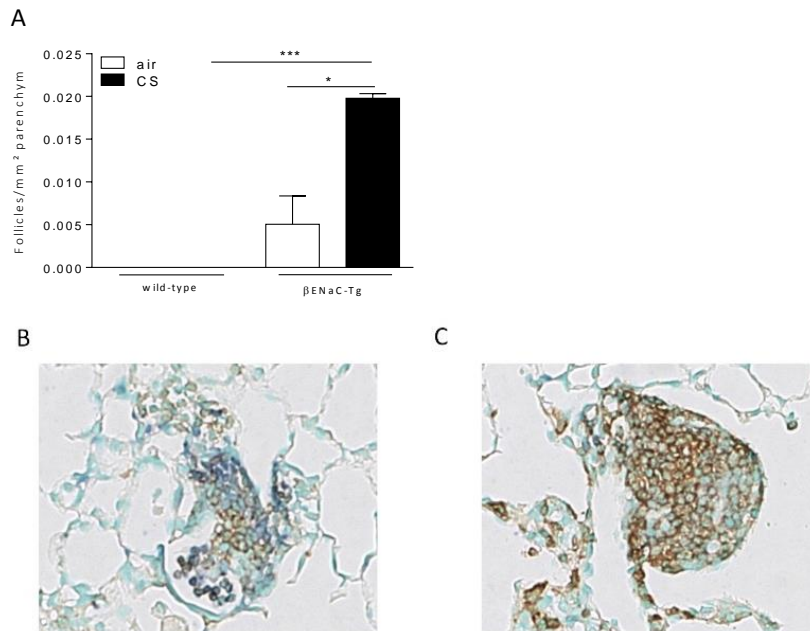
Protein levels of Cxcl1 in BAL fluid upon 4 weeks (E) and 8 weeks (G) air or CS exposure. Protein levels of Ccl20 in BAL fluid upon 4 weeks (B) and 8 weeks (D) air or CS exposure. Protein levels were measured by ELISA. n = 8-11/group. \*p<0.05, \*\*p<0.01, \*\*\*p<0.001

#### *Cigarette smoke-induced formation of lymphoid follicles is accelerated in $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice*

Eight weeks of CS exposure did not induce lymphoid follicles in WT mice. In contrast, after 8 weeks of CS exposure, the formation of lymphoid follicles was already detected in  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice (**Fig. 6**). Whereas lymphoid follicle formation upon chronic CS exposure (i.e. 6 months) was shown to be associated with



elevated expression of Cxcl13 in WT mice, transcript levels of this chemokine were not increased following 8 weeks of CS-exposure in  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice (data not shown).



**Figure 6. Cigarette smoke-induced lymphoid follicle formation in  $\beta$ ENaC-tg, but not in WT mice after 8 weeks of CS exposure.**

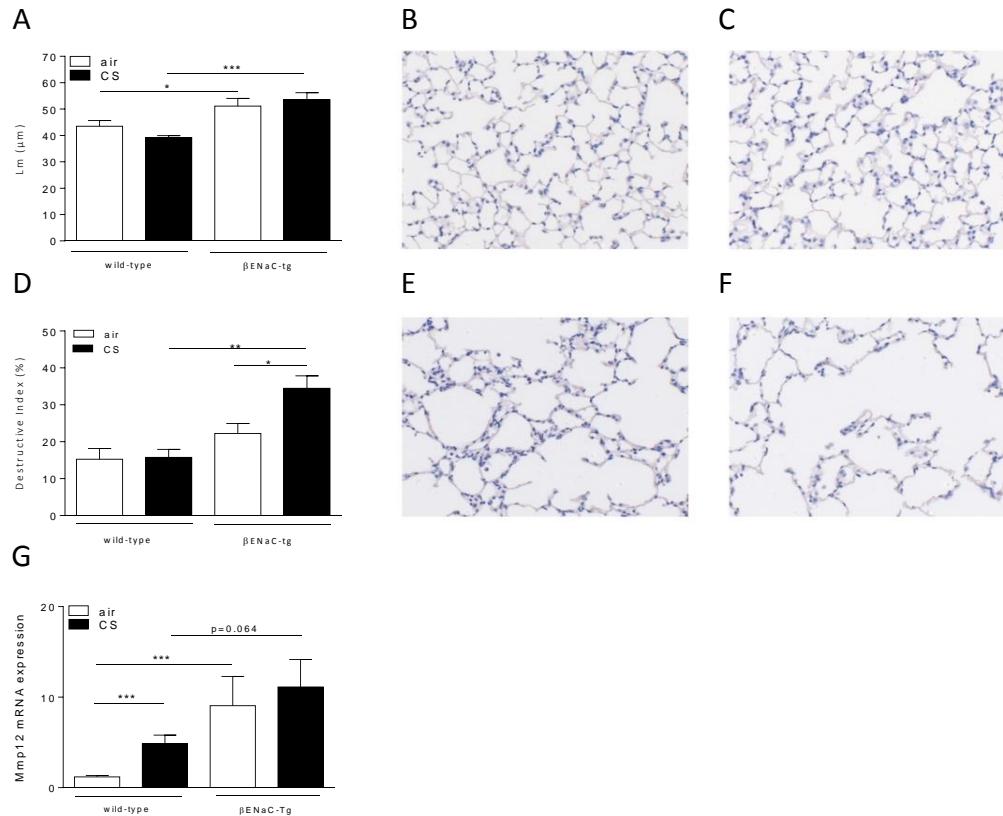
**(A)** Quantification of lymphoid follicles normalized for the area of parenchyma (mm<sup>2</sup>) upon 8 weeks of air or CS exposure. n = 8-11/group. **(B-C)** Representative images of lymphoid follicles found in CS-exposed  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice. \*p<0.05, \*\*p<0.01, \*\*\*p<0.001

#### *Cigarette smoke-induced alveolar destruction is aggravated in $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice*

Emphysema was measured by two complementary methods. The mean linear intercept (Lm), a measure for alveolar airspace enlargement, was significantly enlarged in the  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice compared to WT littermates (**Fig. 7 A**). However, 4 weeks of CS exposure did not further increase the Lm, neither in the  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice nor in the WT controls (**Fig. 7 A**). Emphysema was also quantified by determining the destructive index (DI). This measure quantifies the percentage of destruction of the alveolar walls. The DI tended to be higher in air-exposed  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg compared to WT mice (**Fig. 7 D**). Importantly, 4 weeks of CS exposure did not result in an increased DI in WT mice, but did induce a significantly increased level of destruction in  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice. (**Fig. 7 D**). Similar results were obtained after 8 weeks of CS exposure (**Suppl. Fig. S3**). Interestingly, Mmp12 mRNA expression was higher in lungs of  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice compared to WT littermates (**Fig. 7 G**).

#### *Cigarette smoke does not induce airway wall remodelling in $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice*

We investigated airway wall remodelling in mice by measuring the amount of fibronectin and collagen deposited in the airway walls. Fibronectin and collagen deposition in the airway walls did not differ between WT and  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice and was not affected by 4 or 8 weeks of CS exposure (**Suppl. Fig. S4**).



**Figure 7. Cigarette smoke-induced alveolar destruction is increased in βENaC-Tg mice.**

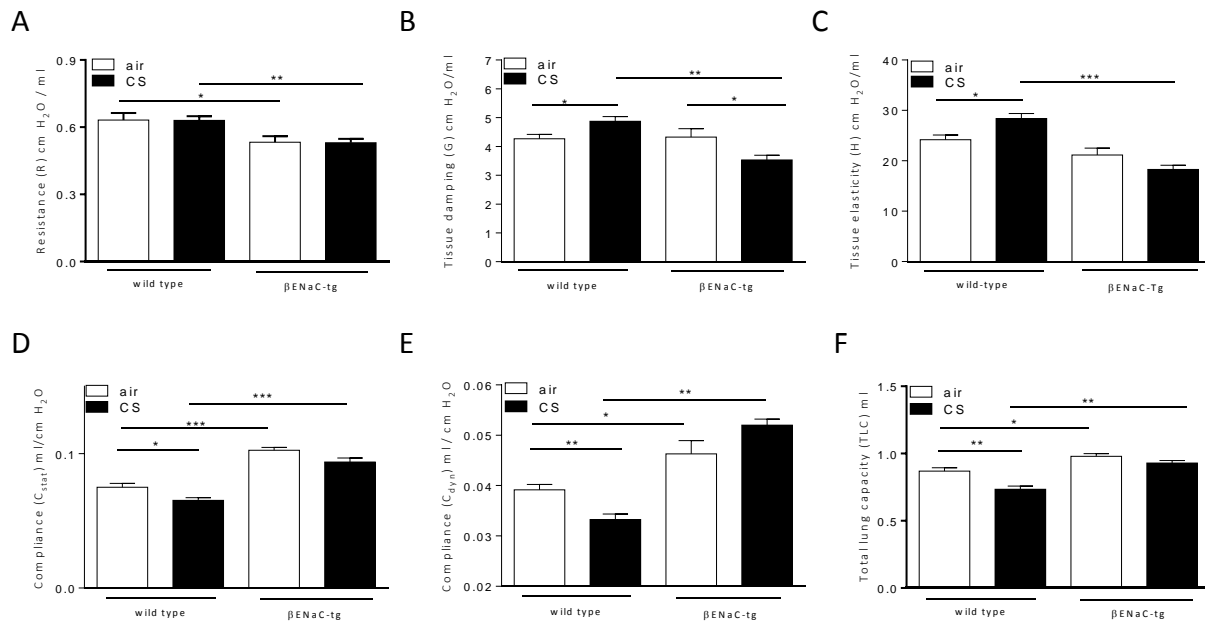
(A) Mean linear intercept (Lm) upon 4 weeks of air or CS exposure. n = 7-8/group. Representative image of WT mice: air-exposed (B) and CS-exposed (C). Destructive index (DI) upon 4 weeks of air or CS exposure (D). n = 7-8/group. Representative image of βENaC-Tg mice: air-exposed (E) and CS-exposed (F). mRNA expression of Mmp12 in total lung upon 4 weeks of air- or CS exposure (G). Normalized for 3 reference genes (Hprt1, Gapdh, and Tfrc). n = 6/group. \*p<0.05, \*\*p<0.01, \*\*\*p<0.001

#### *Cigarette smoke-induced changes in lung function in WT and βENaC-Tg mice*

We assessed the pulmonary function of WT and βENaC-Tg mice after 4 weeks of exposure to air or CS. Air-exposed βENaC-Tg mice exhibited a lower total pulmonary resistance, compared to air-exposed WT mice (**Fig. 8 A**). CS exposure did not influence the total pulmonary resistance, neither in WT nor in βENaC-Tg mice (**Fig. 8 A**). However, CS exposure significantly decreased the tissue damping in βENaC-Tg mice, whereas CS exposure of WT mice resulted in an increased tissue damping (**Fig. 8 B**). This parameter is used to assess the tissue resistance. In addition, the tissue elasticity was significantly lower in CS-exposed βENaC-Tg mice, compared to CS-exposed WT mice (**Fig. 8 C**).

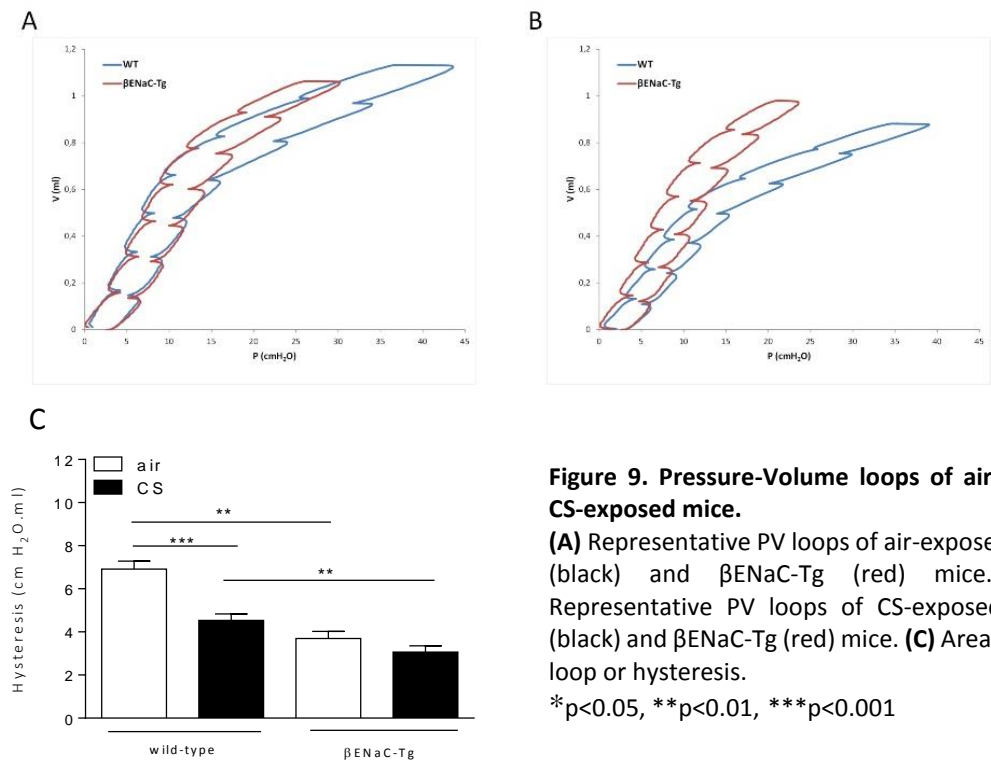
A significantly increased static and dynamic compliance was registered in βENaC-Tg mice compared to WT mice, consistent with the increase in mean linear intercept measured in βENaC-Tg mice (**Fig. 8 A**). Whereas CS exposure induced a significant decrease of both compliances in WT mice, CS exposure had no significant

effect on the elevated static and dynamic compliance in the  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice (**Fig. 8 D-E**). The total lung capacity (TLC) was significantly higher in  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg compared to WT mice. CS exposure induced a decrease in TLC in WT mice, but did not influence this parameter in  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice (**Fig. 8 F**). Analysis of the PV-loops demonstrated that the hysteresis, i.e. area between inflating and deflating part of the PV-loop, was significantly decreased in air-exposed  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice compared to WT mice (**Fig. 9 A-C**). Exposing mice to CS, decreased the hysteresis both in WT and in  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice. Of note, hysteresis was significantly lower in CS-exposed  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice compared to CS-exposed WT mice (**Fig. 9 C**).



**Figure 8. Effect of CS exposure on lung function in WT and  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice.**

Lung function was determined in WT and  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice after exposure to air or CS for 4 weeks. **(A)** Resistance (R) of the entire compartment (airways, tissue and chest wall). **(B)** Tissue damping (G), related to tissue resistance. **(C)** Tissue elasticity (H). **(D)** Static compliance (C<sub>stat</sub>). **(E)** Dynamic compliance (C<sub>dyn</sub>). **(F)** Total lung capacity (TLC). \*p<0.05, \*\*p<0.01, \*\*\*p<0.001



**Figure 9. Pressure-Volume loops of air- and CS-exposed mice.**  
**(A)** Representative PV loops of air-exposed WT (black) and  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg (red) mice. **(B)** Representative PV loops of CS-exposed WT (black) and  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg (red) mice. **(C)** Area of PV loop or hysteresis.  
\* $p<0.05$ , \*\* $p<0.01$ , \*\*\* $p<0.001$

## DISCUSSION

There is increasing evidence of airway surface dehydration in smokers and patients with COPD. This study demonstrates that airway surface dehydration in  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice aggravates CS-induced airway inflammation, mucin expression and destruction of alveolar walls and accelerates the formation of pulmonary lymphoid follicles. In contrast, CS exposure did not induce airway wall remodelling and had no effect on goblet cell metaplasia in  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice.

It has been demonstrated that CS suppresses the function of the CFTR channel, with airway surface dehydration and decreased mucociliary clearance as consequences<sup>157, 161, 162, 166, 295</sup>. Moreover, Dransfield *et al.* showed that a diminished CFTR function correlates with the presence of chronic bronchitis and the degree of dyspnoea<sup>162</sup>. Since *Cftr*-deficient mice do not exhibit imbalanced airway ion transport in the lower airways and do not display cystic fibrosis-like disease<sup>174-176, 295, 296</sup>, we used  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice, backcrossed onto a C57Bl/6 background<sup>178</sup>, to test the hypothesis whether the presence of airway surface dehydration has an impact on CS-induced pathology and pathophysiology *in vivo*.  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice overexpress the  $\beta$ -subunit of ENaC through an airway-specific *cluB* cell secretory protein (CCSP) promotor<sup>176</sup>. The constitutive hyperabsorption of  $\text{Na}^+$  leads to airway surface dehydration and decreased mucociliary clearance<sup>176, 177</sup>.

Besides an imbalance of epithelial ion transport, mucus hypersecretion may contribute to airway surface dehydration and mucociliary dysfunction. As Button *et al.* elegantly showed in their gel-on-brush model, a hyperconcentrated mucus gel layer with > 8% solids can create sufficient osmotic pressure to cause a collapse of the cilia and mucostasis<sup>138</sup>. Clunes *et al.* found that mucus of chronic cigarette smokers contained approximately 10% solids, which makes it likely that osmotic pressure of the hyperconcentrated mucus layer contributes to mucociliary dysfunction in smokers<sup>146, 297</sup>. The predominant secreted mucins in airway mucus are MUC5AC and MUC5B and both are upregulated in COPD<sup>130, 288, 289</sup>. Consistent with previous studies, we observed higher transcript levels of *Muc5ac* and *Muc5b* and a significant higher number of goblet cells in  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice compared to WT mice<sup>177</sup>. Although the *Muc5b* mRNA expression tended to be increased after 4 weeks of CS exposure, this increase did not reach significance. In contrast, CS induced a significant increase of *Muc5ac* expression in the  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice, both after 4 and 8 weeks of CS exposure. Since mice do not readily develop goblet cell metaplasia upon CS exposure<sup>173, 298</sup>, we did not observe an increase in goblet cell metaplasia after CS exposure, neither in WT nor in  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice. However, substantial mucin hypersecretion has been detected without increase in goblet cell numbers. It has been suggested that Clara cells produce and secrete *Muc5ac* without being subjected to metaplastic changes, including the formation of PAS positive storage granules<sup>155, 299</sup>. Taken together, our results are

consistent with the observation that Muc5ac is highly inducible by noxious stimuli <sup>288</sup> and suggest that hypersecretion of Muc5ac in response to CS exposure may contribute to mucus hyperconcentration and airway surface dehydration.

Airway surface dehydration produces chronic airway inflammation in BAL in  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice, with higher numbers of macrophages, neutrophils and lymphocytes compared to WT littermates <sup>176-178</sup>. Our study confirms and extends these findings by showing that BAL of  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice also exhibits more dendritic cells and CD8<sup>+</sup> T-lymphocytes. By exposing both WT littermates and  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice to CS, we demonstrated that airway surface dehydration was associated with an aggravated CS-induced inflammatory response in  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice. In BAL, CS exposure induced a significantly higher increase in macrophages, neutrophils and CD8<sup>+</sup> T-lymphocytes, key players in COPD pathophysiology, in  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice than in WT mice <sup>4, 38, 45, 104</sup>. Interestingly, this exaggerated response already occurred after a subacute CS exposure, i.e. 4 weeks.

In lung tissue, the CS-induced inflammatory response was limited to an increase in macrophages. Along with this increase in macrophage numbers, we observed an increase in matrix metalloproteinase 12 (Mmp12), a macrophage-derived protease important in emphysema development in WT and  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice <sup>300, 301</sup>.

Severe COPD is associated with increased numbers of airways containing lymphoid follicles <sup>44</sup>. Moreover, the presence of lymphoid follicles has also been demonstrated in the lung parenchyma of patients with COPD <sup>242</sup>. In WT mice, lymphoid follicles are usually detected after 6 months of CS exposure <sup>246</sup>. In this study, lymphoid follicles were already detected in  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice after 8 weeks of CS exposure, suggesting that airway surface dehydration accelerates the CS-induced formation of lymphoid follicles. Since we did neither observe a dominance of B cells in these lymphoid follicles, nor an upregulation in total lung tissue of Cxcl13 transcript levels, a chemokine involved in lymphoid follicle formation upon chronic CS exposure <sup>246</sup>, we speculate that we observed early stages of follicle formation. Importantly, we did not find evidence of pulmonary infection.

In COPD patients, emphysema develops after many years of cigarette smoking and it consistently requires several months of CS exposure, i.e. 6 months, to evoke emphysema in WT mice. In contrast,  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice develop severe emphysema early in life <sup>177, 300, 302</sup>. Similar elements that lead to the onset of emphysema, can be found in both  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice and patients with COPD. First, in COPD, a proteinase/antiproteinase imbalance plays a key role in the development of emphysema <sup>48, 54, 303</sup>. Recently, it has been shown that Mmp12 and neutrophil elastase also mediate emphysema in  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice <sup>300, 304</sup>. Second, McDonough *et al.* showed that small airway obstruction precedes emphysematous destruction in

COPD patients<sup>305</sup>. In  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice, airway surface dehydration leads to mucus obstruction in the first days of life and preceding the onset of emphysema<sup>176-178</sup>, constituting another similarity to COPD patients. In this study, we confirmed severe emphysema in air-exposed  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice, as quantified by the mean linear intercept (Lm)<sup>177</sup>. However, we did not find a further increase in Lm in the  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice following CS exposure. Given the severity of the constitutive emphysema in adult  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice, it can be questioned whether it is at all possible to establish further enlargement of the Lm upon CS exposure. In contrast, quantifying the destructive index (DI), a measure for alveolar destruction, clearly showed that 4 weeks of CS exposure already induced significant destruction of alveolar tissue in  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice, while there was not yet an effect in WT mice. We also performed lung function measurements and observed a decreased resistance and increased compliance and TLC, indicating that the lung function is dominated by the severe spontaneous emphysema in  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice<sup>177</sup>. Interestingly, following CS exposure, the increased compliance measured in  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice was accompanied by a decreased tissue damping and tissue elasticity. Together with the morphometric analysis of the DI, these data demonstrate that airway surface dehydration aggravated CS-induced emphysema, even after short term exposure, suggesting that this mechanism may contribute to emphysema formation in smokers with COPD.

This study suggests that therapeutic targeting of airway surface dehydration may be beneficial in patients with COPD, although extrapolation of our experimental findings in mice after (sub)acute cigarette smoke-exposure to the complex chronic disease COPD in humans should be performed with caution. It has been shown *in vitro* that the CFTR potentiator ivacaftor can partially rescue the CS-induced CFTR deficiency, thereby restoring the airway surface dehydration and mucociliary clearance in non-CF epithelial cells<sup>166</sup>. Moreover, the phosphodiesterase inhibitor roflumilast has beneficial effects on the CS-induced dehydration of the airway surface of epithelial cell lines through elevation of intracellular cAMP levels and activation of CFTR<sup>165</sup>. These proof-of-concept studies may facilitate future clinical trials that will be required to determine therapeutic effects improving CFTR function and airway surface hydration on mucus obstruction, airway inflammation and emphysema in patients with COPD.

Of note, our results also suggest that CS exposure of  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice can be used as a time-saving model for COPD-like pathology. Within a short time frame of 4 to 8 weeks, these mice already develop a strong pulmonary inflammation, with the formation of lymphoid follicles, and destruction of alveolar tissue, whereas these pathologies in WT mice can only be observed following 6 months of CS exposure. In addition,  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice also possess more characteristics of chronic bronchitis, including goblet cell metaplasia and intraluminal mucus content, than WT mice.

In summary, acquired CFTR malfunction and mucin hypersecretion, both leading to mucus hyperconcentration, have been demonstrated in smokers with and without COPD, implicating that airway surface dehydration is present in these patients<sup>157, 161</sup>. In our study, we have shown that the presence of airway surface dehydration in  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice significantly aggravates the CS-induced pathological hallmarks of COPD, including mucin expression, pulmonary inflammation, formation of lymphoid follicles and destruction of alveolar walls. We speculate that the impaired mucociliary clearance caused by airway surface dehydration results in a retention and concentration of CS in the airways, thus leading to exaggerated host responses, such as mucus hypersecretion and enhanced inflammation. Proteases, originating from macrophages and neutrophils, can then lead to destruction of alveolar tissue and emphysema. The results of our study identify airway surface dehydration as a novel risk factor for CS-induced pathology.



## PART II

### CHAPTER 8: EPIDEMIOLOGY AND IMPACT OF CHRONIC BRONCHITIS IN COPD

The chronic bronchitis phenotype in COPD is a validated phenotype with important impact on clinical outcomes. However, there are inconsistent reports on the importance of chronic bronchitis on exacerbation rate and mortality risk in patients with COPD. Therefore, we aimed to investigate the epidemiology of chronic bronchitis in COPD in the Rotterdam Study.

Lies Lahousse, **Leen J.M. Seys**, Guy F. Joos, RS-PI, Bruno H. Stricker, Guy G. Brusselle. Epidemiology and impact of Chronic Bronchitis in COPD. Manuscript in preparation

**ABSTRACT**

**BACKGROUND:** Research on the association between chronic bronchitis and Chronic Obstructive Pulmonary Disease (COPD)-exacerbations has led to discordant results. Furthermore, the impact of chronic bronchitis on mortality in COPD subjects is unclear.

**METHODS:** This study is embedded within the Rotterdam Study, a population-based cohort study among subjects aged 45 years and older with long-term follow-up. Chronic bronchitis was defined as having a productive cough for at least three months a year for two consecutive years. Cross-sectional and longitudinal analyses were performed with logistic regression and Cox proportional hazard models respectively.

**RESULTS:** Of 972 COPD subjects included in the study, 752 COPD subjects had no chronic phlegm production (CB-) and 220 subjects had chronic phlegm production of whom 172 (78%) met the definition of chronic bronchitis (CB+). CB+ subjects were older, more frequently current smokers and had a higher amount of pack years of cigarette smoking than CB- subjects. Adjusted for age, sex and pack years, COPD subjects with CB had an increased risk of frequent exacerbations (OR 4.0 95%CI 2.7-5.9). During follow-up, CB+ subjects had significantly larger decline in lung function (-38 ml per year, 95%CI -61.7;-14.6). Survival was worse in especially female COPD subjects with CB. Regarding cause-specific mortality, CB+ COPD subjects had a significantly increased risk of respiratory mortality (HR 2.16, 95%CI 1.12-4.17, p=0.022 adjusted for age, sex and pack years).

**CONCLUSIONS:** COPD subjects with chronic bronchitis have an increased risk of exacerbations and (respiratory) mortality compared to COPD subjects without chronic phlegm production.

## INTRODUCTION

Progressive, not completely reversible airflow limitation is the main characteristic of chronic obstructive pulmonary disease (COPD). Patients with COPD typically suffer from chronic cough, expectoration of phlegm, dyspnoea and a variety of extra-pulmonary symptoms. Clinical presentation, response to therapy and disease progression are very heterogeneous among patients with COPD <sup>2</sup>. Identifying and studying subgroups of patients with similar traits within the COPD syndrome can aid in guiding more individualised therapy and assessment of prognosis <sup>306</sup>. Several COPD phenotypes have been proposed, but only a few have been validated <sup>14</sup>. One of these COPD phenotypes is the chronic bronchitis (CB) phenotype which is generally defined as patients with COPD which experience chronic cough and sputum production for at least three months per year for two consecutive years <sup>147</sup>.

Epidemiological studies linking the CB phenotype in COPD to outcomes, have generated inconsistent results, especially regarding exacerbations and mortality. Both outcomes are crucial since they have a substantial impact on the burden of disease <sup>2</sup>. Although COPD is a chronic disease, acute exacerbations and the rate at which they occur, determine the progression of the disease <sup>188</sup>. Because COPD exacerbations have been associated with worse quality of life <sup>25, 307</sup>, accelerated deterioration of lung function <sup>24, 187</sup>, an increased risk for hospital admission <sup>308</sup> and an increase in mortality <sup>309</sup>, they have an important impact on the health care-related costs <sup>14</sup>. Two large-scale, patient-based observational studies have reported on exacerbation rates in COPD patients with CB, with opposing results. The Evaluation of COPD Longitudinally to Identify Predictive Surrogate End-points (ECLIPSE)-study did not find an association between chronic bronchitis and COPD exacerbations, whereas the COPDGene study detected a strong association <sup>32, 185, 189</sup>. Other patient-based studies seem to contribute to these discordant results <sup>29, 30, 196, 310</sup>. In contrast, observations from population-based studies are scarce <sup>183, 187</sup>.

The effect of the presence of CB in COPD patients on mortality risk is unclear as well. Although several papers observed an increased mortality risk in COPD patients with CB, it is not clear whether this subgroup of COPD patients is more prone to all-cause mortality or specifically to COPD-related respiratory mortality <sup>182, 191, 192</sup>. Furthermore, several studies found different effects of the presence of CB on mortality in men and women <sup>182</sup>.

Since previous studies on the impact of chronic bronchitis on the course of COPD have provided discordant results, we aimed to investigate the exacerbation rate and mortality risk of COPD patients with or without chronic bronchitis in a prospective population-based cohort study with long-term follow-up, the Rotterdam Study <sup>283</sup>.

## METHODS

### *Study design*

The present study is embedded within the Rotterdam Study (RS), a population based cohort study comprising almost 15.000 participants aged  $\geq 45$  aiming at assessing the occurrence of, and risk factors for chronic diseases in the elderly <sup>283</sup>. The study started in 1989 and all participants are invited every 3 to 4 years to the research centre for follow-up examinations, including spirometry. All participants with prevalent COPD and completed questionnaires on chronic bronchitis during the examination rounds performed from 2001 up to 2008, were included. Follow-up time was defined as the time period between the subject's visit to the examination round, and death or end of study period (e.g. January 1st, 2013 for the validation of (cause-specific) death), whichever came first. The medical ethics committee of the Erasmus Medical Centre, Rotterdam, and the review board of The Netherlands Ministry of Health, Welfare and Sports, approved the study. Participants gave written informed consent.

### *Assessment of COPD*

The diagnosis of COPD was based on an obstructive spirometry examination according to the modified Global Initiative for Chronic Obstructive Lung Disease (GOLD) criteria (proportion of the forced vital capacity exhaled in the first second ( $FEV_1/FVC$ )  $< 0.7$ ) or in absence of an interpretable spirometry at the research center, based on the diagnosis by a respiratory physician or general practitioner combining clinical history, physical examination and spirometry <sup>311</sup>. Spirometry was performed between 2001 and 2008 using a SpiroPro® portable spirometer (Erich Jaeger GmbH, Hoechberg, Germany) and from 2009 onwards using a Master Screen® PFT Pro (CareFusion, San Diego, CA) by trained paramedical personnel according to the ATS/ERS guidelines <sup>312</sup>. The incident COPD date was defined as the date of the first obstructive lung function or the date of COPD diagnosis in the medical reports or the date of the first prescription of COPD medication, whichever came first.

### *Assessment of chronic bronchitis*

Chronic bronchitis was assessed by questionnaire and defined as having a productive cough for at least three months a year during the last two years. More specifically, all subjects were questioned (1) 'Did you cough nearly daily for three consecutive months during the last two years?' and (2) 'Did you cough up phlegm nearly daily for three consecutive months during the last two years?'. Subjects answering no on both occasions or no to the second question, were defined as having no chronic phlegm production (CB-). Subjects answering yes twice were defined as having chronic bronchitis (CB+).

### *Assessment of exacerbations*

All COPD subjects were prospectively followed for the onset of exacerbations from their examination visit until death or end of study period (e.g. January 1st, 2011 for the validation of exacerbations). Moderate COPD exacerbations were defined as acute episodes of worsening symptoms needing a course of steroids and/or antibiotics. Complete information on all filled prescriptions on a day-to-day basis was obtained in automated format from the pharmacies.

Severe COPD exacerbations were defined as exacerbations requiring a hospitalization due to COPD. All hospital admissions were continuously registered in The Dutch Medical Registry (LMR). The exacerbation rate was defined as the ratio of the total number of exacerbations over the total follow-up time. COPD subjects with frequent exacerbations were determined as subjects who had at least two (rounded) moderate or severe exacerbations on average per year during follow-up.

### *Assessment of quality of life and mortality*

Quality of life was measured by questionnaire and summarized as the weighted average of scores given to questions about mobility, ability and activity, self-care, pain and anxiety. Information on vital status was obtained from general practitioners and from municipal records. Causes of death during follow-up were coded according to the International Classification Of Diseases (ICD)-10<sup>313</sup>. The following categories were applied: pulmonary mortality (ICD-10: J15-J44), cardiac mortality (ICD-10: I21-I73, R96), death from bronchial carcinoma (ICD-10: C34), death from other malignancies (ICD-10: C15-C96 except C34) and other causes of death (ICD-10: all other used codes).

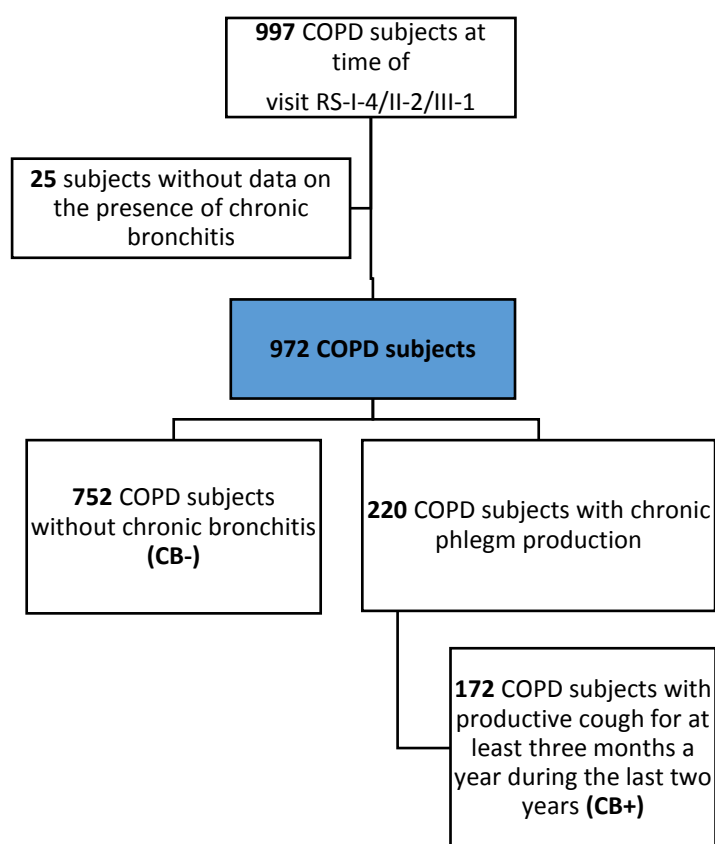
### *Statistical analyses*

Differences between subjects with and without chronic bronchitis were studied using Mann-Whitney U test for continuous variables and Chi-Square test for categorical variables. Logistic regression models were used to calculate the risk of frequent exacerbations. Cox hazard regression models were used to calculate the time to (cause-specific) death. All models were adjusted for age, sex and pack-years of cigarette smoking. Statistical analyses were performed using SPSS, version 23.0 for Windows (IBM, North Castle, NY).

## RESULTS

### *Patient population*

Of 972 COPD subjects included in the cohort study, 752 subjects with COPD had no chronic phlegm production (CB-) and 220 subjects had chronic phlegm production of whom 172 (78%) met the strict criteria of chronic bronchitis (CB+) (**Figure 1**). CB+ COPD subjects were older, more frequently current smokers and had a higher amount of pack years of cigarette smoking (**Table 1**). Furthermore, COPD subjects with CB had a worse lung function at baseline than COPD subjects without CB (**Table 1**). In addition, quality of life was significantly worse in COPD subjects suffering from chronic bronchitis (**Table 1**).



**Figure 1: Study flow chart**

	COPD, CB- (n=752)	COPD, CB+ (n=172)	p-value
<b>Age (years)</b>	70.5 (15.2)	74.1 (13.6)	0.004
<b>Males</b>	380 (50.5%)	96 (55.8%)	0.122
<b>Smoking status</b>			0.005
Never smoker	134 (17.8%)	17 (9.9%)	
Former smoker	407 (54.1%)	89 (51.7%)	
Current smoker	211 (28.1%)	66 (38.4%)	
<b>Pack-years cigarette smoking</b>	23.0 (41.2)	30.6 (35.1)	<0.001
<b>Height (m)</b>	1.69 (0.14)	1.68 (0.12)	0.529
<b>Weight (kg)</b>	76.7 (18.8)	74.8 (17.3)	0.082
<b>BMI (kg/m<sup>2</sup>)</b>	26.6 (5.3)	26.0 (5.5)	0.093
<b>FEV<sub>1</sub> (l)</b>	3.1 (1.6)	2.9 (1.4)	0.034
<b>FEV<sub>1</sub> (% pred)</b>	82.0 (26.7)	70.5 (27.8)	<0.001
<b>FVC (l)</b>	2.0 (1.1)	1.8 (0.9)	<0.001
<b>FVC (% pred)</b>	101.0 (29.5)	91.9 (33.0)	0.008
<b>FEV<sub>1</sub>/FVC (%)</b>	65.4 (7.0)	61.0 (10.0)	<0.001
<b>Quality of life (%)</b>	80.0 (21.9)	71.9 (31.3)	<0.001

**Table 1: Baseline characteristics of COPD subjects without chronic bronchitis and with chronic bronchitis.** Categorical variables are expressed as numbers (percentage). Values of continuous variables are expressed as median (interquartile range). Pack years were missing in 46 subjects, height/weight/BMI in 43 subjects, interpretable baseline lung function measurement was missing in 330 subjects, lung function decline over time in 653 subjects and quality of life in 12 subjects.

*Abbreviations:* BMI = body mass index; CB= chronic bronchitis; COPD= Chronic Obstructive Pulmonary Disease; FEV<sub>1</sub>= forced expiratory volume in one second; FVC= forced vital capacity

Figure

*Impact of chronic bronchitis on lung function and exacerbation rate*

281 COPD subjects had an interpretable lung function measurement between 2002-2008 and a second between 2009-2014. During this follow-up, COPD subjects with CB had a -38.2 ml per year larger decline in lung function than COPD subjects without CB (95%CI -61.7;-14.6) adjusted for age, sex and pack years of cigarette smoking (**Table 2**). The adjusted decline in lung function was -42.8 ml per year for male COPD subjects with CB and -36.1 ml per year for female COPD subjects with CB compared to male and female COPD subjects without CB respectively (**Table 2**).

	Model 1 (n=270)			Model 2 (n=259)		
	$\beta$	95% CI	p-value	$\beta$	95% CI	p-value
COPD with chronic bronchitis	-35.2	-57.9;-12.5	0.002	-38.2	-61.7;-14.6	0.002
Male COPD with chronic bronchitis	-42.8	-77.3;-8.2	0.016	-42.8	-78.1;-7.6	0.018
Female COPD with chronic bronchitis	-29.4	-58.7;-0.05	0.050	-36.1	-67.1;-5.2	0.022

**Table 2: Association between chronic bronchitis and lung function decline (ml/yr)**

Model 1: age and sex\* adjusted

Model 2: adjusted for age, sex\* and pack years of cigarette smoking.

Abbreviations:  $\beta$ = unstandardized bèta-coefficient of millilitres lung function decline per year; CI= Confidence Interval; COPD= Chronic Obstructive Pulmonary Disease

\*only in the unstratified analyses.

During follow-up until January 1<sup>st</sup>, 2011, COPD subjects with CB had a three times higher median rate of moderate to severe exacerbations per year (0,33 exacerbations per year (IQR 0,85) in the CB-COPD group versus 0,99 (IQR 1,78) in the CB+ COPD group;  $p \leq 0.001$ ). The percentage of COPD subjects whom experienced at least one severe exacerbation during follow-up was also higher for COPD subjects with CB compared to COPD subjects without CB (20.3% versus 7.0%,  $p < 0.001$ ). Adjusted for age, sex and pack years of cigarette smoking, COPD subjects with CB had a fourfold increased risk (OR 4.0 95%CI 2.7-5.9) of frequent exacerbations ( $\geq 2$  moderate or severe exacerbations per year) (**Table 3**). The odds ratio on frequent exacerbations was 3.12 for male COPD subjects with CB and 5.10 for female COPD subjects with CB compared to male and female COPD subjects without CB respectively (**Table 3**). Similar results on lung function decline and exacerbation rate were observed when the group of 172 subjects meeting the strict definition was extended to the 220 subjects with chronic phlegm production.



	Model 1 (n=924)			Model 2 (n=878)		
	OR	95% CI	p-value	OR	95% CI	p-value
COPD with chronic bronchitis	4.13	2.82-6.04	<0.001	3.96	2.67-5.88	<0.001
Male COPD with chronic bronchitis	3.21	1.90-5.42	<0.001	3.12	1.82-5.31	<0.001
Female COPD with chronic bronchitis	5.16	2.94-9.05	<0.001	5.10	2.83-9.20	<0.001

**Table 3: Association between chronic bronchitis and the frequent exacerbator phenotype.**

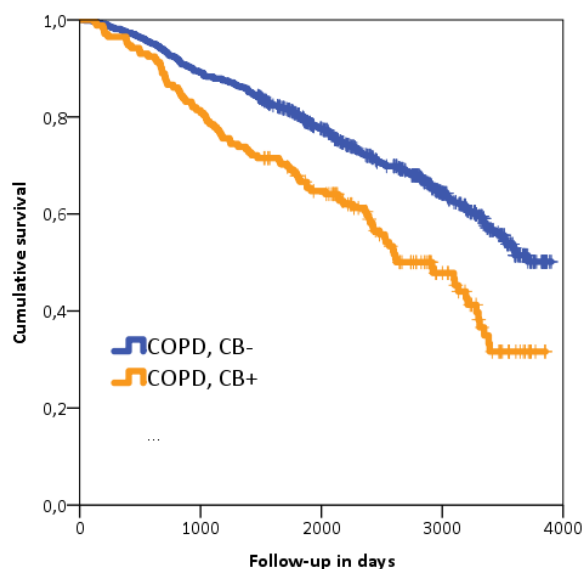
Model 1: age and sex\* adjusted

Model 2: adjusted for age, sex\* and pack years of cigarette smoking.

Abbreviations: CI= Confidence Interval; COPD= Chronic Obstructive Pulmonary Disease; OR= Odds Ratio \*only in the unstratified analyses.

#### *Impact of chronic bronchitis on all-cause and cause-specific mortality*

During 5 856 person years of follow-up, 351 COPD subjects died: 92 (53.5%) among those with CB and 259 (34.4%) among those without CB. COPD subjects with CB had worse survival than COPD subjects without CB as illustrated in **Figure 2**. Compared to COPD subjects without CB, mortality risk was increased by 33% in COPD subjects with CB after adjustment for age, sex and pack years (**Table 4**, HR 1.33, 95%CI 1.04-1.71,  $p=0.024$ ). Stratified for sex, female COPD subjects with CB had a significantly worse survival, while the effect was less pronounced in men and no longer significant after adjustment for pack years of cigarette smoking (**Table 4**).



**Figure 2:** Kaplan-Meier curve of all-cause mortality according to COPD without chronic bronchitis (CB-, n=752) or with chronic bronchitis (CB+, n=172).

	Model 1 (n=924)			Model 2 (n=878)		
	HR	95% CI	p-value	HR	95% CI	p-value
COPD with chronic bronchitis	1.45	1.14-1.84	0.002	1.33	1.04-1.71	0.024
Male COPD with chronic bronchitis	1.32	0.98-1.78	0.072	1.22	0.89-1.65	0.212
Female COPD with chronic bronchitis	1.69	1.14-2.53	0.010	1.57	1.03-2.40	0.036

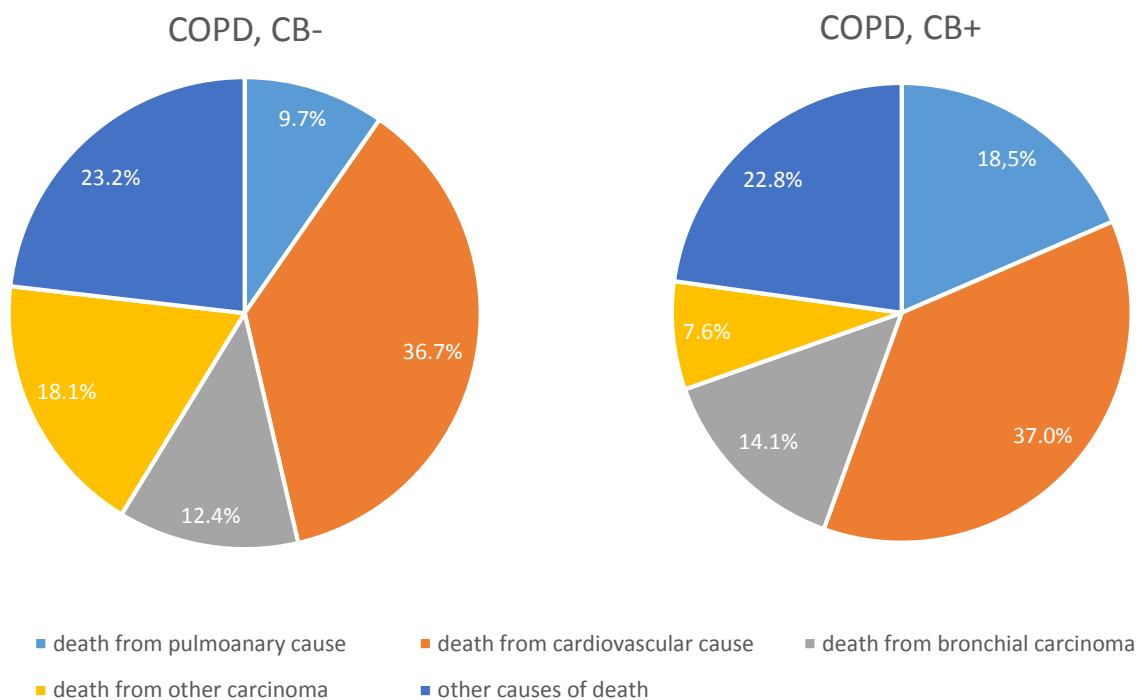
**Table 4 : Association between chronic bronchitis and the risk of all-cause death in COPD, additionally stratified according to sex.**

**Model 1:** age and sex\* adjusted

**Model 2:** adjusted for age, sex\* and pack years of cigarette smoking.

**Abbreviations:** CI= Confidence Interval; COPD= Chronic Obstructive Pulmonary Disease; HR= Hazard Ratio, \*only in the unstratified analyses.

The most frequent causes of death in COPD patients are shown in **Figure 3** and listed in more detail in **Table S2** of the online supplement. Compared to CB- COPD subjects, COPD subjects with CB died more frequently due to pulmonary complications of COPD including exacerbations, emphysema or pneumonia (**Figure 3**). COPD subjects with CB had a more than twofold increased risk of pulmonary mortality compared to COPD subjects without CB (HR 2.70, 95%CI 1.45-5.04, p=0.002 adjusted for age and sex; HR 2.16, 95%CI 1.12-4.17, p=0.022 adjusted for age, sex and pack years). Of note, mortality due to lung cancer (bronchial carcinoma) was numerically higher but did not significantly differ between COPD subjects with and without CB (14.1% versus 12.4%) (**Figure 3**).



**Figure 2: Major causes of death according to COPD without (CB-, n=752) or with chronic bronchitis (CB+, n=172).**

## DISCUSSION

In this large, population-based cohort study, we demonstrate that COPD subjects with concomitant chronic bronchitis (CB+) have a worse lung function at baseline and a subsequent larger lung function decline during follow-up. In addition, CB+ COPD subjects experience significantly more exacerbations during follow-up than COPD subjects without CB. Moreover, CB+ COPD subjects have a fourfold increased risk of frequent exacerbations. Furthermore, this study shows that CB+ COPD subjects have a higher mortality risk, especially COPD-related pulmonary death. Importantly, the increased risk of frequent exacerbations and the increased risk of mortality is more pronounced in women than in men.

In our study, the prevalence of CB in subjects with COPD is 17.7%. Defining CB by the presence of chronic phlegm, with or without the presence of chronic cough, increased the prevalence in our study towards 22.6%. There is a considerable variability in the prevalence of CB among subjects with COPD reported in other studies, ranging from 7.4%<sup>183</sup> up to 74%<sup>30</sup>. Several variations of the classical definition have been used to determine CB. In the PLATINO Study, the prevalence doubled using a less stringent definition<sup>183</sup>. Furthermore, a higher prevalence is reported in patient-based studies which generally do not include a high percentage of patients with mild COPD, whereas population-based studies, such as the Rotterdam Study, incorporate an unselected COPD population, which generally includes a larger proportion of subjects with mild COPD. Other factors that influence the prevalence of CB among COPD subjects are smoking history and geographical localisation<sup>180, 186</sup>. Lu *et al.* reported that living in a rural area was associated with an increased risk for the development of chronic bronchitis<sup>186</sup>.

A remarkable observation is that during the follow-up period, COPD subjects with CB experienced an excess lung function decline of 38,2 ml/year compared to COPD subjects without CB. Considering that lung function decline was determined in a subgroup of the population that survived until the next examination round and that had two interpretable measurements, this difference in lung function decline is considerable. The association of CB with a more rapid decline in lung function remained significant with the less stringent definition of CB and was slightly more pronounced in male COPD subjects with CB. In line with our findings, the population-based Copenhagen City Heart Study reported an excess decline in FEV<sub>1</sub> of 22.8 ml/year for men and 12.6 ml/year for women during a 5 year follow-up in COPD subjects with CB, whereas the patient-based ECLIPSE Study did not detect a difference in lung function decline in COPD patients with or without CB during a three year follow-up, indicating the importance of a relevant follow-up period<sup>187, 195</sup>. In addition, Allinson *et al.* recently showed in a British cohort study with long-term follow-up, that the presence of CB was associated with an additional 4.5 ml/year decline in FEV<sub>1</sub>, irrespective of the presence of COPD<sup>314</sup>.

Conflicting results exist regarding the exacerbation rate in COPD patients with CB. In our study, we observed a significantly increased exacerbation rate and a fourfold increased risk of frequent exacerbations in CB+ COPD subjects compared to COPD subjects without CB. In line, an increased exacerbation rate and an increased risk of frequent exacerbations was also reported for COPD subjects with CB in the COPDGene Study and in a small study (n=70) in the UK <sup>25, 185</sup>. In contrast, the observations from the ECLIPSE study and a patient-based study in Spain did not significantly associate chronic bronchitis to COPD exacerbations <sup>32, 189, 196</sup>. In the population-based PLATINO study, the number of exacerbations in the past year were not significantly different for CB+ compared to CB- subjects, but the percentage of subjects with at least one exacerbation in the past year was significantly higher in the COPD group with CB compared to the COPD group without CB <sup>183</sup>.

Viral and bacterial infections account for the majority of exacerbations in COPD <sup>315, 316</sup>. Observations from the Copenhagen City Heart Study indicate that indeed subjects with chronic bronchitis are more vulnerable for pulmonary infections <sup>187, 191</sup>. This was also reported in the Lung Health Study where subjects with chronic bronchitis reported significantly more lower respiratory illness than those without chronic bronchitis <sup>317</sup>. These reports strengthen the association between CB and COPD exacerbations.

Potentially due to the increased vulnerability to exacerbations, we observed that COPD subjects with CB are especially more prone to pulmonary-related death compared to CB- COPD subjects. Furthermore, in this population, we demonstrated that the presence of CB induced an increased all-cause mortality risk of 33% in COPD subjects. Our results of increased mortality in CB+ COPD subjects are in line with those of Pelkonen *et al.*, reporting an even higher increase in both all-cause and respiratory-related mortality <sup>192</sup>.

An important observation in this study is that the associated risk of having CB on frequent exacerbations and on mortality, is more pronounced in female than in male subjects with COPD. Analogue results were found in the Copenhagen City Heart Study, where women with CB experienced more COPD-related hospitalisations than men with CB <sup>187</sup>. In addition, results from the US Six Cities Study also indicated that women with CB have an increased risk for COPD-related death, compared to men with CB <sup>318</sup>. Gender differences have been described in the effect of cigarette smoking on lung function and hospitalisation for COPD, with women being more vulnerable for the effects of cigarette smoking <sup>319-321</sup>. Since the presence of CB is strongly associated with current smoking <sup>322</sup>, the higher vulnerability of women for the effects of cigarette smoking might add to the differences in the risk ratios we observed in this study.

The strengths of our study are the general population-based setting, allowing us to investigate associations in an unselected COPD population, the long-term follow-up and the prospective data collection. In the Rotterdam Study, moderate and severe exacerbations are indeed continuously and automatically

registered based on pharmacy filled prescription data and a national hospitalization register, which prevents recall bias compared to self-reporting of the exacerbation frequency during the previous year in retrospective studies. This also includes a limitation, since we have no data on the frequency of mild exacerbations, which are attended by an increase of the regular medication.

A second limitation of our study is the fact that lung function decline could only be determined in a subgroup of the COPD subjects since a substantial proportion of the subjects died before lung function could be measured a second time and not all subjects had two interpretable lung function tests. However, even in this smaller group, the difference in lung function decline between COPD subjects with and without CB was significant.

In conclusion, we have shown that subjects with both COPD and CB have more decline in lung function, experience more exacerbations and have a higher risk for pulmonary-related mortality. Moreover, the increased risk of frequent exacerbations and mortality is even more pronounced in female COPD subjects with CB. The results indicate that COPD patients with CB need optimal prophylaxis and close monitoring to prevent exacerbations. Furthermore, this study shows that there is a need for better therapies which target CB since these might reduce the exacerbation rate and mortality risk in patients with COPD.

## PART II

### CHAPTER 9: ROLE OF B CELL-ACTIVATING FACTOR IN CHRONIC OBSTRUCTIVE PULMONARY DISEASE

In COPD, the number of airways with lymphoid follicles is associated with disease severity. In addition, the expression of B cell-Activating Factor (BAFF) in these lymphoid follicles in patients with COPD is also correlated with disease severity. In order to investigate the role of BAFF and lymphoid follicles in COPD, we localized BAFF expression in lymphoid follicles of patients with COPD and antagonized BAFF in a murine model of COPD.

**Seys LJ**, Verhamme FM, Schinwald A, Hammad H, Cunoosamy DM, Bantsimba-Malanda C, Sabirsh A, McCall E, Flavell L, Herbst R, Provoost S, Lambrecht BN, Joos GF, Brusselle GG, Bracke KR. Role of B Cell-Activating Factor in Chronic Obstructive Pulmonary Disease. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2015; 192: 706-718. <sup>323</sup>

**ABSTRACT**

Rationale: B cell-activating factor (BAFF) plays a major role in activation of B cells and in adaptive humoral immune responses. In chronic obstructive pulmonary disease (COPD), lymphoid follicles have been associated with disease severity, and overexpression of BAFF has been demonstrated within lymphoid follicles of patients with severe COPD.

Objectives: To investigate expression and localization of BAFF in the lungs of patients with COPD and to study the role of BAFF in COPD by antagonizing BAFF in a mouse model of chronic cigarette smoke (CS) exposure.

Methods: We quantified and localized BAFF expression in lungs of never-smokers, smokers without COPD, and patients with COPD and in lungs of air- or CS-exposed mice by reverse-transcriptase polymerase chain reaction, ELISA, immunohistochemistry, and confocal imaging. Next, to investigate the role of BAFF in COPD, we antagonized BAFF by prophylactic or therapeutic administration of a soluble fusion protein of the BAFF-receptor, BAFFR-Fc, in mice exposed to air or CS for 24 weeks and evaluated several hallmarks of COPD and polarization of lung macrophages.

Measurements and Main Results: BAFF expression was significantly increased in lungs of patients with COPD and CS-exposed mice. BAFF staining in lymphoid follicles was observed around B cells, CD4+ cells, dendritic cells, follicular dendritic cells, and fibroblastic reticular cells. Prophylactic and therapeutic administration of BAFFR-Fc in mice reduced pulmonary B-cell numbers and prevented CS-induced formation of lymphoid follicles and increases in immunoglobulin levels. Interestingly, prophylactic BAFFR-Fc administration significantly attenuated pulmonary inflammation and destruction of alveolar walls. Moreover, antagonizing BAFF altered the phenotype of alveolar and interstitial macrophages.

Conclusions: BAFF is significantly increased in lungs of patients with COPD and is present around both immune and stromal cells within lymphoid follicles. Antagonizing BAFF in CS-exposed mice attenuates pulmonary inflammation and alveolar destruction.



## INTRODUCTION

Chronic Obstructive Pulmonary Disease (COPD) is a progressive disease, characterized by pulmonary inflammation, emphysema and obstructive bronchiolitis <sup>4</sup>. In Western countries the main cause of COPD is cigarette smoking. However, even after smoking cessation, the disease persists and the underlying mechanisms need to be elucidated <sup>4</sup>.

Pulmonary inflammation in COPD is characterized by an innate immune response, alongside an important increase in adaptive immune cells <sup>4</sup>. The innate immune response is thought to be primarily driven by recruited neutrophils as well as the most abundant resident cells in the lung, the alveolar and interstitial macrophages. Elevated numbers of CD4+ and CD8+ T lymphocytes and B lymphocytes have been observed in both large and peripheral airways of patients with COPD <sup>51, 103, 240, 324</sup>. In addition, the presence of lymphoid follicles is significantly increased in patients with severe COPD <sup>44</sup>. B cells are the major cell population in these follicles <sup>44</sup> and B cell proliferation within the germinal centers of the follicles has an oligoclonal, antigen-specific character <sup>242</sup>. Importantly, the antigens responsible for the oligoclonal proliferation are not yet identified and could either have a microbial nature or could derive from smooth muscle, airway epithelium, pulmonary endothelium or degradation of extracellular matrix <sup>242, 270, 325-327</sup>. As a result, the question remains whether these follicles are beneficial or harmful. In addition, the role of B lymphocytes in COPD remains unclear <sup>206</sup>.

B lymphocytes rely on B cell activating factor (BAFF) for maturation, differentiation and survival. This cytokine is a type II transmembrane homotrimer protein of the tumor necrosis factor (TNF) family and is expressed by innate immune cells, T cells, activated B cells, stromal cells and airway epithelium. Processed soluble BAFF is necessary for B cell homeostasis, but BAFF is also expressed as a membrane-bound protein. Three receptors have been described for BAFF, namely BAFF receptor (BAFFR), transmembrane activator and cyclophilin ligand interactor (TACI) and B cell maturation antigen (BCMA). All three receptors are located on subsets of lymphocytes <sup>218, 328</sup>.

A significantly higher level of BAFF expression was measured in lymphoid follicles and macrophages of patients with COPD compared to control smokers and non-smokers <sup>263</sup>. However, the role of BAFF in the pathogenesis of COPD is not yet clear. Therefore, we stained BAFF in lungs and lymphoid follicles of patients with COPD and co-stained for dendritic cells (DC), B cells, T cells, follicular DC and fibroblastic reticular cells. Next, we antagonized BAFF in chronic cigarette smoke-exposed mice and investigated the effect on B cells, the occurrence of lymphoid follicles and finally the impact on pulmonary inflammation and emphysema. Furthermore, since macrophages contribute to inflammation in the lung, we investigated whether BAFFR-Fc administration altered the lung inflammatory state through changes in the polarization

status of alveolar and interstitial macrophages. Some of the results of these studies have been previously reported in the form of an abstract <sup>329</sup>.

## METHODS

More details of methods and materials can be found in the online supplement.

### *Human study populations*

Written informed consent was obtained from all subjects according to protocols approved by the medical ethical committee of the Ghent University Hospital. All tissue originated from lung resection specimens of patients diagnosed with solitary pulmonary tumors at Ghent University. Tissue was harvested from the resection specimen at maximum distance of the pulmonary lesions by a pathologist. Only tissue without signs of pneumonia or tumor invasion was collected. Study populations of 70 and 69 subjects were used respectively for RT-PCR analysis on total lung tissue and protein detection in lung homogenates (Table 1 and 2).

	Never-smokers	Smokers	COPD II
<b>Number</b>	16	24	30
<b>Age (years)</b>	64 (51-71)	65 (55-71)	65 (59-69)
<b>Gender (M/F)</b>	3/13 <sup>#</sup>	19/5 <sup>#</sup>	29/1 <sup>#</sup>
<b>Current-smoker/Ex-smoker</b>	NA	12/12 <sup>#</sup>	17/13 <sup>#</sup>
<b>Pack-years</b>	NA	33 (15-50) <sup>†</sup>	45 (40-60) <sup>†§</sup>
<b>FEV<sub>1</sub> (% predicted)</b>	110 (92-118)	96 (92-113)	69 (64-74) <sup>†§</sup>
<b>FEV<sub>1</sub>/FVC (%)</b>	78 (75-83)	76 (73-78)	56 (53-60) <sup>†§</sup>
<b>ICS (yes/no)</b>	0/16 <sup>#</sup>	1/23 <sup>#</sup>	13/17 <sup>#</sup>

**Table 1: Characteristics of Study Subjects for Lung mRNA Analysis by Quantitative Real-Time Polymerase Chain Reactions**

*Definition of abbreviations:* COPD = Chronic Obstructive Pulmonary Disease; ICS = inhaled corticosteroids; mRNA = messenger RNA; NA = not applicable

Data are presented as median (IQR)

<sup>#</sup> P<0.001, Fisher's exact test

<sup>†</sup> P<0.001 versus never-smokers, Mann-Whitney U test

<sup>§</sup> P<0.05 vs smokers, Mann-Whitney U test

<sup>§</sup> P<0.001 vs smokers, Mann-Whitney U test

	Never-smokers	Smokers	COPD II
<b>Number</b>	19	18	32
<b>Age (years)</b>	65 (51-71)	61 (52-68)	66 (59-73)
<b>Gender (m/f)</b>	5/14 <sup>#</sup>	13/5 <sup>#</sup>	29/3 <sup>#</sup>
<b>Current-smoker/Ex-smoker</b>	NA	17/1 <sup>#</sup>	21/11 <sup>#</sup>
<b>Pack-years</b>	0	34 (22-46) <sup>†</sup>	44 (35-60) <sup>†‡</sup>
<b>FEV<sub>1</sub> (% predicted)</b>	110 (97-118)	95 (91-112)	73 (65-77) <sup>†§</sup>
<b>FEV<sub>1</sub>/FVC (%)</b>	80 (75-83)	76 (73-80)	56 (51-63) <sup>†§</sup>
<b>ICS (yes/no)</b>	0/19 <sup>#</sup>	1/17 <sup>#</sup>	15/17 <sup>#</sup>

**Table 2: Characteristics of Study Subjects for Protein Analysis in Lung Homogenate by ELISA**

*Definition of abbreviations:* COPD = Chronic Obstructive Pulmonary Disease; ICS = inhaled corticosteroids; mRNA = messenger RNA; NA = not applicable

Data are presented as median (IQR)

<sup>#</sup> P<0.001, Fisher's exact test

<sup>†</sup> P<0.001 versus never-smokers, Mann-Whitney U test

<sup>‡</sup> P<0.05 vs smokers, Mann-Whitney U test

<sup>§</sup> P<0.001 vs smokers, Mann-Whitney U test

### *Mice*

Male C57Bl/6 mice were purchased from The Jackson Laboratory (Bar Harbor, ME) at 6-8 weeks of age. The mice were kept under standard conditions with a 12h light-dark cycle and a standard diet (Pavan, Brussels, Belgium). Chlorinated tap water was provided *ad libitum*. The local Ethics Committee for animal studies of the Faculty of Medicine and Health Sciences (Ghent University) approved all *in vivo* manipulations.

### *Cigarette smoke exposure*

Mice were exposed to mainstream cigarette smoke (CS) as described previously<sup>278</sup>. Four times a day, five days a week, mice were exposed whole body to the smoke of five cigarettes (Reference Cigarette 3R4F without filter, University of Kentucky, Lexington, KY). A smoke-free interval of 30 minutes was respected in between smoke exposures. The smoke/air ratio was 1/6. The control groups were exposed to room air.

### *Antagonizing BAFF – study protocol*

Eight groups of 10 mice were exposed to air or CS for 24 weeks. Six groups of mice were treated twice weekly intraperitoneally (ip) with 200µl of either phosphate-buffered saline (PBS), mouse IgG<sub>1</sub> isotype (clone IA7) (1 µg/µl) (MedImmune, Gaithersburg, MD, USA) or BAFFR-Fc (1 µg/µl) (AstraZeneca, Alderley Park, UK) during the 24 weeks (i.e. prophylactic setup). In a therapeutic setup, two other groups received twice weekly ip treatment with either mouse IgG<sub>1</sub> isotype or BAFFR-Fc from halfway through the CS exposure period, i.e. starting at week 13 of the CS exposure period. (Suppl. Fig. E1). The injections were

given 1 hour before air or CS exposure. The antagonizing agent, BAFFR-Fc, is a fusion protein that exists of the extracellular domain of mouse BAFFR, fused at the C-terminus to a linker peptide and the Fc-portion of human IgG1.

We did not detect a meaningful difference between the PBS-treated and the isotype-treated control groups nor between the prophylactic and therapeutic isotype-treated groups. Therefore, for reasons of clarity, the PBS-treated groups and the therapeutic isotype-treated group will not be displayed.

#### *Quantification and detection of BAFF*

BAFF mRNA expression was measured in mice and human lung tissue using TaqMan Gene Expression Assays (Applied Biosystems, Foster City, CA)<sup>330</sup>. Immunofluorescence staining was performed on frozen sections of human lung tissue of patients with COPD. These sections were stained with anti-BAFF (Abcam), anti-BAFFR (Abcam), anti-CD19, biotinylated anti-CD11c, biotinylated anti-CD68, anti-CD4, anti-CD8, anti-Ki-M4 and anti-ERTR-7. Immunohistochemical staining was performed with anti-BAFF antibody (Abcam) on lung tissue of mice. The protein levels of BAFF in BAL fluid supernatant of mice and in homogenate of human lung tissue were determined with an ELISA kit (R&D systems).

#### *Quantification of lymphoid follicles and aggregates*

Paraffin-embedded sections of the left lung of mice were stained immunohistochemically with anti-CD3 (DAKO) and anti-B220 (BD biosciences), as described previously<sup>257</sup>. Dense accumulations of more than 50 cells were counted as lymphoid follicles. Diffuse infiltrations of less than 50 cells were counted as lymphoid aggregates.

#### *Quantification of inflammation*

Flow cytometry (FACSCalibur, BD biosciences) was used to quantify the inflammatory cells in BAL fluid and lung tissue<sup>253, 292, 293</sup>. The flow cytometry data of the BAL samples were supplemented with differential cell counts via cytoSpin. In BAL fluid and lung homogenate, the protein levels of cytokines and chemokines were determined with a cytometric bead array (BD biosciences, San Diego, CA)<sup>279</sup>. Immunoglobulins were measured in BAL fluid and serum via commercially available ELISA kits (R&D systems). Reverse transcriptase-polymerase chain reaction (RT-PCR) with the Biomark System (Fluidigm, San Francisco, CA) was performed to establish the mRNA expression levels of 92 target genes.

#### *Quantitative image analysis of macrophage phenotypic markers*

Immunohistochemical staining with anti-F4/80, anti-iNOS and anti-SOCS3 antibody from Abcam, anti-Arginase-1 antibody (Atlas Antibodies) and anti-CD163 antibody (Leica) was performed using an IntelliPath FLX automated staining machine. Computerized image analysis using Visiopharm Integrator System

software (version 4.6.3, Visiopharm, Horsholm, Denmark) was used. Results were expressed as area fractions.

#### *Quantification of emphysema*

Emphysema was measured by two complementary methods. By calculating the mean linear intercept (Lm), the enlargement of the alveolar airspaces was established <sup>280</sup>. Destruction of the alveolar walls was quantified by determining the destructive index <sup>246, 281</sup>.

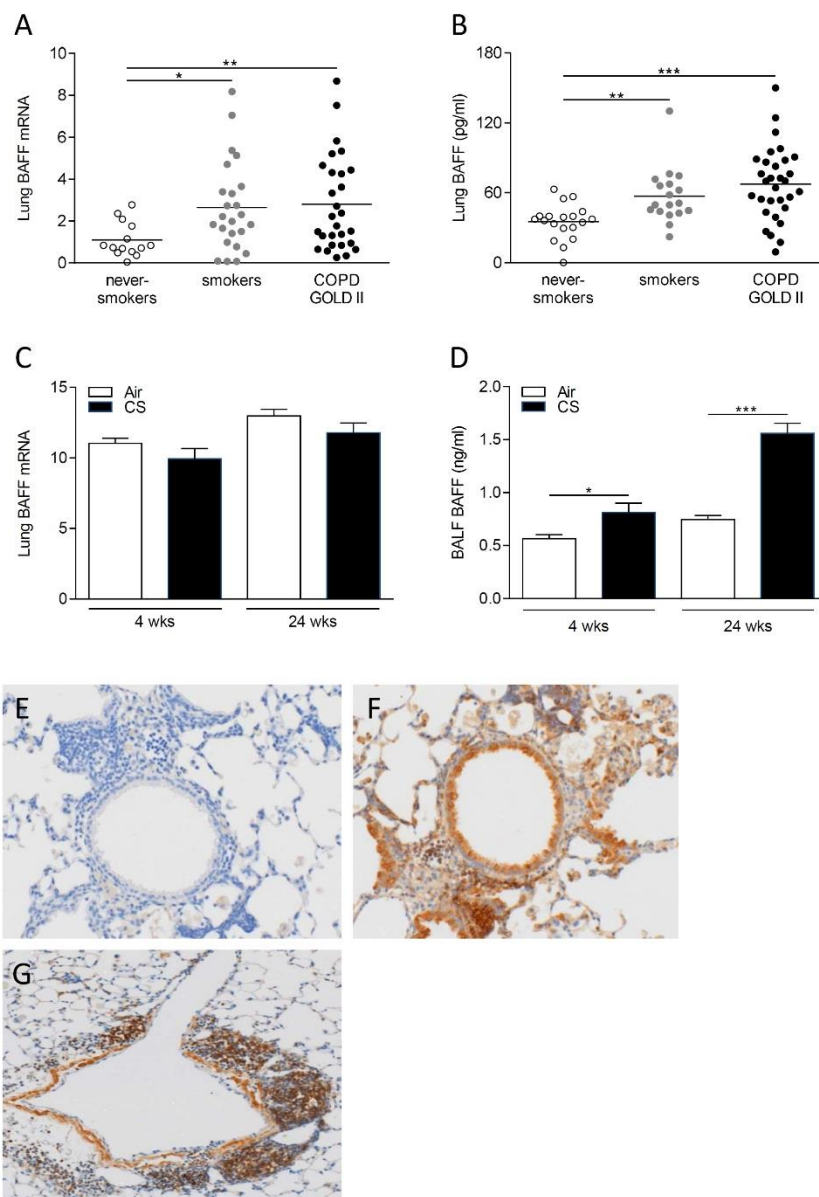
#### *Statistical analysis*

The statistical analyses were calculated with Sigma Stat software (SPSS 21.0; Chicago, IL) using non-parametric tests (Kruskall-Wallis, Mann-Whitney-U). All reported values are expressed as mean  $\pm$  SEM and p-values < 0.05 were considered significant.

## RESULTS

### *Expression of BAFF in patients with COPD*

The mRNA levels of BAFF were quantified in lung tissue of 70 subjects and were significantly upregulated in patients with COPD and smokers without COPD compared to never smokers (Fig. 1A). In agreement with the mRNA expression, quantification of BAFF protein levels in lung homogenates of 69 subjects, revealed significantly higher BAFF protein in patients with COPD and smokers without COPD, compared to never smokers (Fig. 1B). No significant differences were observed between smokers with or without COPD, neither on the mRNA nor on the protein level (Fig. 1A-B).



**Figure 1: mRNA and protein levels of B cell activating factor.**

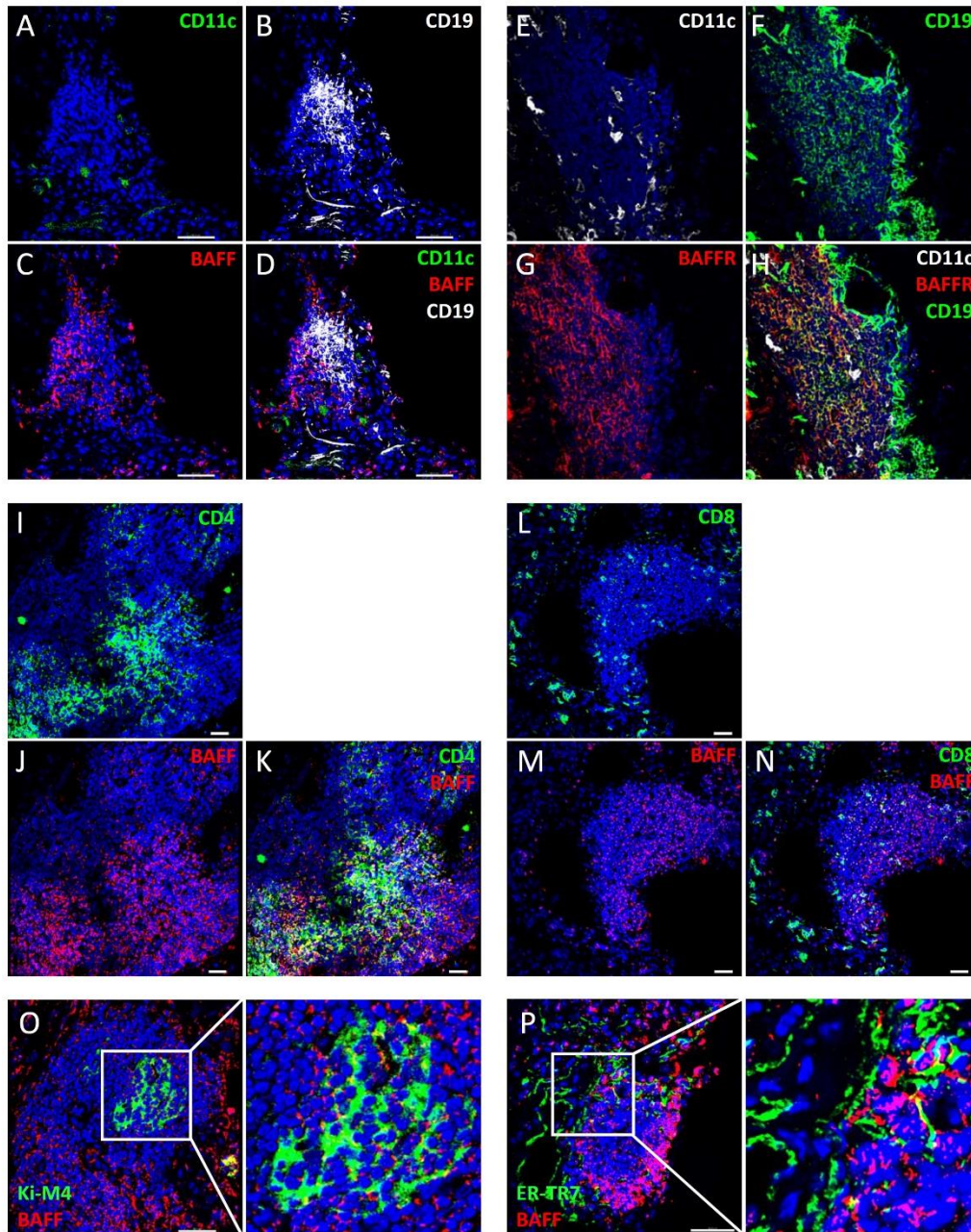
BAFF mRNA levels in total lung tissue of 16 never-smokers, 24 smokers without airway obstruction and 30 patients with COPD GOLD stage II (A). mRNA expression levels in human lung tissue are relative to 7 reference genes (HPRT1, GAPDH, POP4, IPO8, PPIA, POLR2A, PSMC4). BAFF protein levels in lung homogenates of 19 never-smokers, 18 smokers without airway obstruction and 32 patients with COPD GOLD stage II, as measured by ELISA (B).

BAFF mRNA levels in total lung tissue (C) and BAFF protein levels in bronchoalveolar lavage fluid (D) of mice exposed to 4 and 24 weeks of air or cigarette smoke (CS). mRNA expression levels in mice are relative to 3 reference genes (Hprt1, Gapdh, Tfr1).

Immunohistochemical staining of BAFF on lung tissue of mice exposed to 24 weeks of CS: (E) isotype control staining, (F-G) BAFF staining in lymphoid follicles, airway epithelium, endothelium, macrophages and alveolar walls.

\* $p < 0.05$ , \*\* $p < 0.01$ , \*\*\* $p < 0.001$





**Figure 2 : Confocal staining of B cell activating factor in pulmonary lymphoid follicles of patients with COPD**

Immunofluorescence staining of conventional dendritic cells (CD11c) (A), B cells (CD19) (B), B cell activating factor (BAFF) (C) and the merge of the stainings (D).

Immunofluorescence staining of conventional dendritic cells (CD11c) (E), B cells (CD19) (F), BAFF receptor (BAFFR) (G) and the merge of the stainings (H).

Immunofluorescence staining of CD4+ cells (I), B cell activating factor (BAFF) (J) and the merge of the stainings (K). Immunofluorescence staining of CD8+ cells (L), B cell activating factor (BAFF) (M) and the merge of the stainings (N).

(O) Immunofluorescence staining of BAFF and follicular dendritic cells (identified using Ki-M4 as marker). (P) Immunofluorescence staining of BAFF and fibroblastic reticular cells (identified using ERTR7 as marker).



Confocal imaging of lung tissue of patients with COPD was performed to localize BAFF and BAFFR in lymphoid follicles. BAFF, B cells and conventional DC were co-stained in lymphoid follicles (Fig 2 A-D). Merged images showed that BAFF was present in the area closely surrounding DCs and parts of the B cell area. In a second immunofluorescence staining, BAFFR was co-stained with B cells and conventional DCs (Fig 2 E-H). These images showed that BAFFR was co-localized with B cells. Co-staining of BAFF with CD4 or CD8 revealed BAFF staining in the vicinity of CD4<sup>+</sup>, but not CD8<sup>+</sup> cells (Fig. 2I-N). Co-staining of BAFF with follicular dendritic cells (identified using Ki-M4 as marker) and fibroblastic reticular cells (identified using ER-TR7 as marker) showed that BAFF was present in the vicinity of these stromal cell types in lymphoid follicles of patients with COPD (Fig. 2O-P).

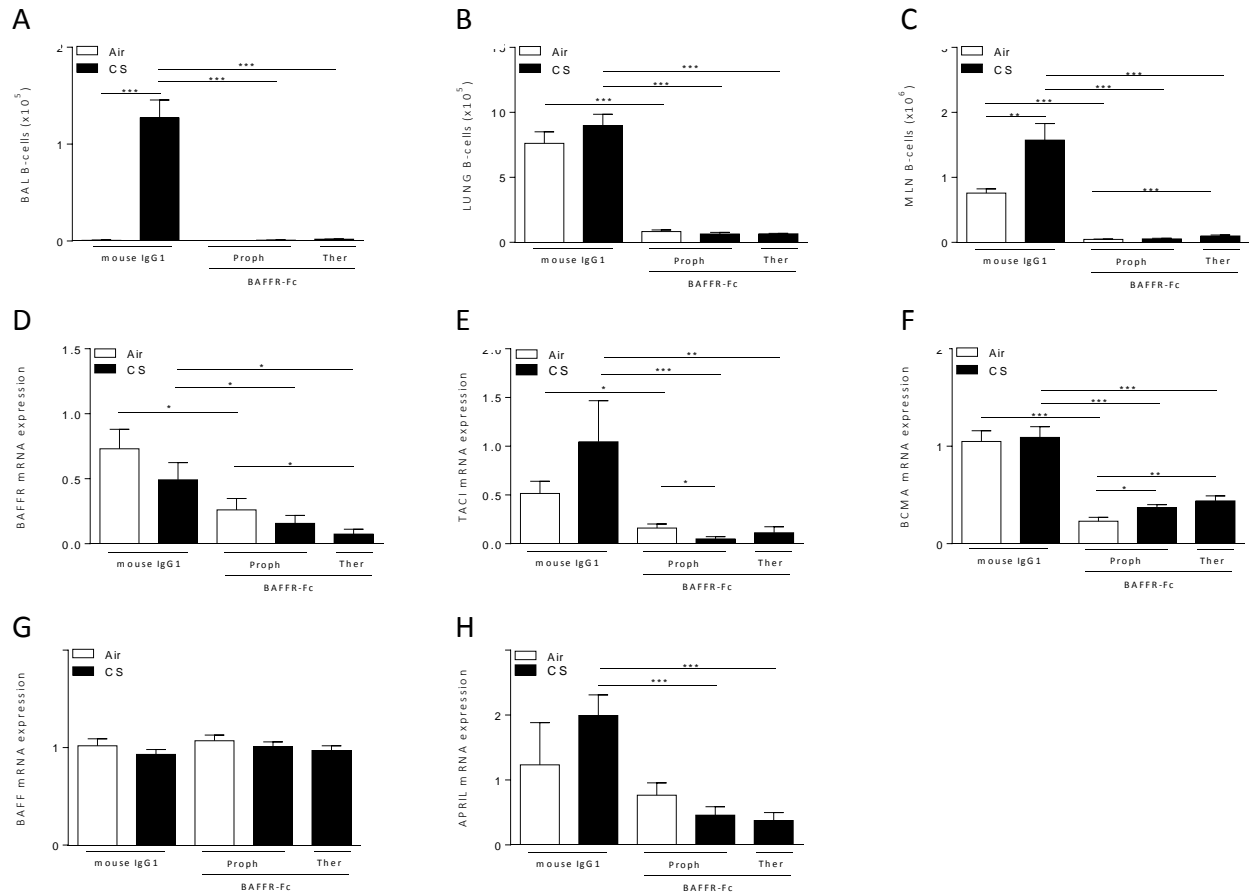
#### *Expression of BAFF in mice following cigarette smoke exposure*

Analysis of the pulmonary BAFF mRNA levels after 4 and 24 weeks of air or CS exposure did not reveal significant differences (Fig 1C). Four weeks of CS exposure induced a significant increase in BAFF protein levels in BAL fluid. This increase in BAFF protein was even more pronounced after 24 weeks of CS exposure (Fig 1D). The localization of the BAFF protein in lung tissue of mice was established by immunohistochemistry. In mice exposed to 24 weeks of CS, the lymphoid follicles, airway epithelium, smooth muscle cells, macrophages and neutrophils were positive for BAFF (Fig 1 E-G).

#### *Antagonizing BAFF reduces B cells in BAL, lung and mediastinal lymph nodes*

CS exposure induced an increase in the numbers of B cells in BAL, lung and mediastinal lymph nodes (MLN). To investigate the functional role of BAFF, we administered BAFFR-Fc to C57Bl/6 mice, either prophylactically (i.e. from the start of the CS exposure) or therapeutically (i.e. starting after 13 weeks of CS exposure) (Suppl. Fig. E1). Both prophylactic and therapeutic administration of BAFFR-Fc significantly reduced the number of B cells in all three compartments in air- and CS-exposed mice (Fig 3 A-C). In lung and MLN the B cell count was diminished to approximately a tenth of the number of B cells of the isotype-treated control groups (Fig 3 B-C). In BAL the B cell population was decreased to a greater extent (Fig 3 A). Moreover, mRNA expression levels of CD19 and CXCR5, both highly expressed in B cells, were significantly reduced in all BAFFR-Fc-administered groups (Suppl Table E1).

In addition, the mRNA transcript levels of BAFF, APRIL and their receptors BAFFR, TACI and BCMA (which are mainly expressed on B cells) were determined. CS exposure did not evoke a significant change in any of the transcript levels. On the other hand, BAFFR-Fc administration significantly decreased the transcript levels of APRIL, BAFFR, TACI and BCMA, but had no effect on the mRNA expression of BAFF (Fig. 3 D-H).



**Figure 3: Antagonizing B cell activating factor reduces the number of B cells in bronchoalveolar lavage, lung and mediastinal lymph nodes.**

B cell numbers in bronchoalveolar lavage (BAL) (A), lung (B) and mediastinal lymph nodes (MLN) (C).

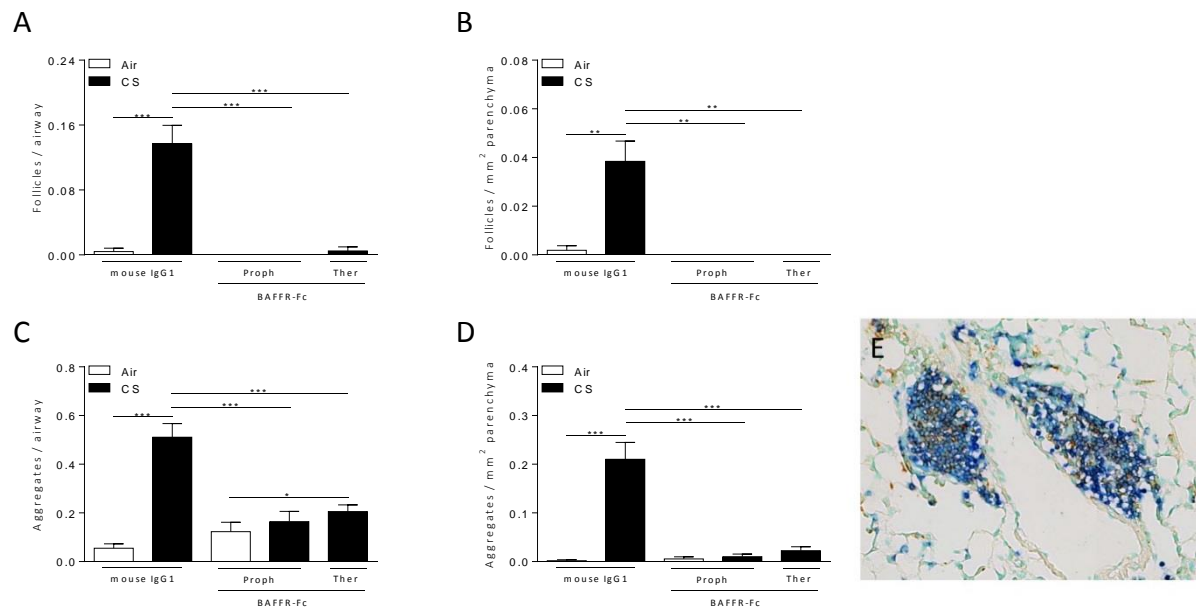
mRNA expression of BAFFR (gene name *Tnfrsf13c*) (D), TACI (gene name *Tnfrsf13b*) (E), BCMA (gene name *Tnfrsf17*) (F), BAFF (gene name *Tnfsf13b*) (G) and APRIL (gene name *Tnfsf13*) (H) in total lung tissue relative to 3 reference genes (*Hprt1*, *Gapdh*, *Tfrc*).

\* $p < 0.05$ , \*\* $p < 0.01$ , \*\*\* $p < 0.001$

However, quantitative scoring of immunohistochemical staining revealed reduced levels of BAFF protein in the airway epithelium of prophylactic BAFFR-Fc-treated mice compared to isotype-treated mice (Suppl Fig. E2). Additionally, macrophages were scored semi-quantitatively for BAFF protein, but no differences were detected between groups (data not shown).

### Antagonizing BAFF prevents lymphoid follicle formation

Upon CS exposure, lymphoid follicles, defined as large, dense infiltrations of more than 50 cells, were generated in the isotype-treated group, both peribronchial and in the lung parenchyma (Fig 4 A-B). Conversely, CS exposure did not induce the formation of lymphoid follicles in groups treated both prophylactic and therapeutic with BAFFR-Fc. CS exposure also elicited lymphoid aggregates, defined as small-numbered, diffuse lymphoid infiltrations, in the isotype-treated group. BAFFR-Fc administration minimized the occurrence of both peribronchial and parenchymal aggregates (Fig 4 C-D). Moreover, the CS-induced upregulation of CXCL13, a chemokine important for lymphoid follicle formation, was significantly decreased in the prophylactic BAFFR-Fc-treated, CS-exposed group (Suppl. Table E1).



**Figure 4: Antagonizing B cell activating factor prevents formation of lymphoid follicles and diminishes the number of lymphoid aggregates.**

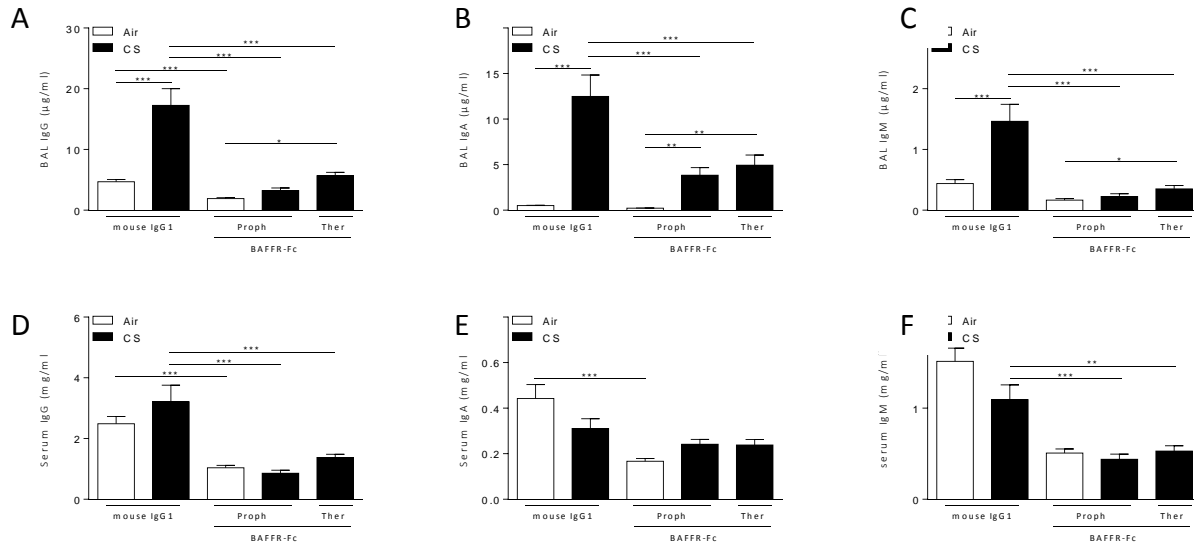
Quantification of peribronchial lymphoid follicles normalized for the number of airways (A) and parenchymal follicles normalized for the area of parenchyma (B),.

Quantification of peribronchial aggregates normalized for the number of airways (C) and parenchymal aggregates normalized for the area of parenchyma (D).

(E) Immunohistochemical staining of a pulmonary lymphoid follicle with anti-cd3 (brown) and anti-B220 (blue) \*\*p<0.01, \*\*\*p<0.001

Consistent with the reduction in the number of B cells in BAL, lung and MLN, and the absence of lymphoid follicles, antagonizing BAFF resulted in significantly lower levels of immunoglobulins in BAL and serum (Fig: 5 A-F). In BAL, IgA, IgG and IgM were reduced in the BAFFR-Fc-treated groups compared to the isotype-

treated groups (Fig 5 A-C). Furthermore, in serum, IgG and IgM levels were decreased in all BAFFR-Fc-treated groups, compared to the isotype-treated groups (Fig. 5 D-F).



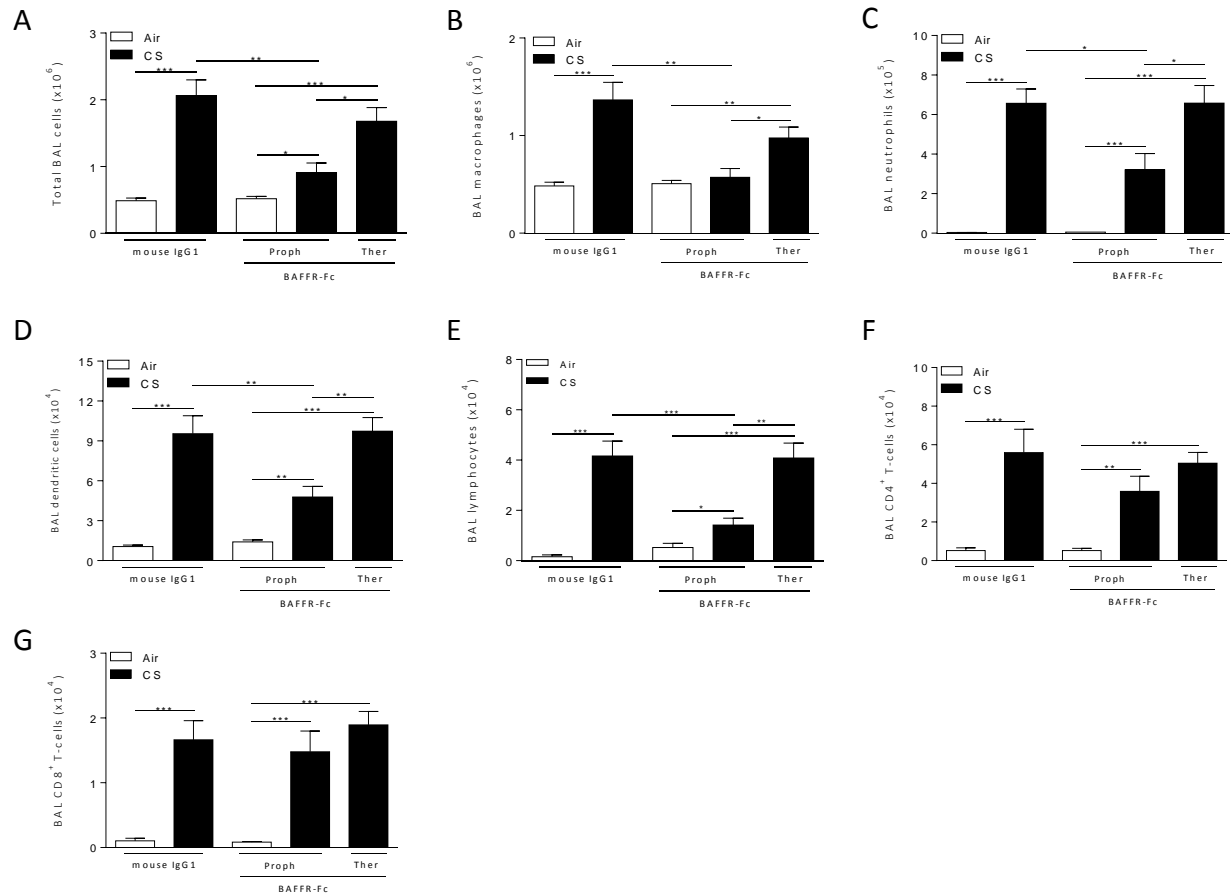
**Figure 5: Immunoglobulins in bronchoalveolar lavage and serum.**

Immunoglobulin (Ig) levels in bronchoalveolar lavage (BAL): IgA(A), IgG (B) and IgM. (C) Immunoglobulin (Ig) levels in serum: IgA(D), IgG (E) and IgM (F).

\*p<0.05, \*\*p<0.01, \*\*\*p<0.001

#### *Antagonizing BAFF attenuates the immune response in BAL and lung*

In BAL, CS exposure induced an increase in total cell count, macrophages, neutrophils, DC and lymphocytes in the isotype-treated group (Fig. 6). Prophylactic BAFFR-Fc administration significantly attenuated the CS-induced increase in total cells, macrophages, neutrophils and DC (Fig. 6 A-D), and tended to attenuate the increase in T lymphocytes (Fig. 6 E-G). Therapeutic BAFFR-Fc administration did not affect the CS-induced inflammation in BAL (Fig. 6 A-G).



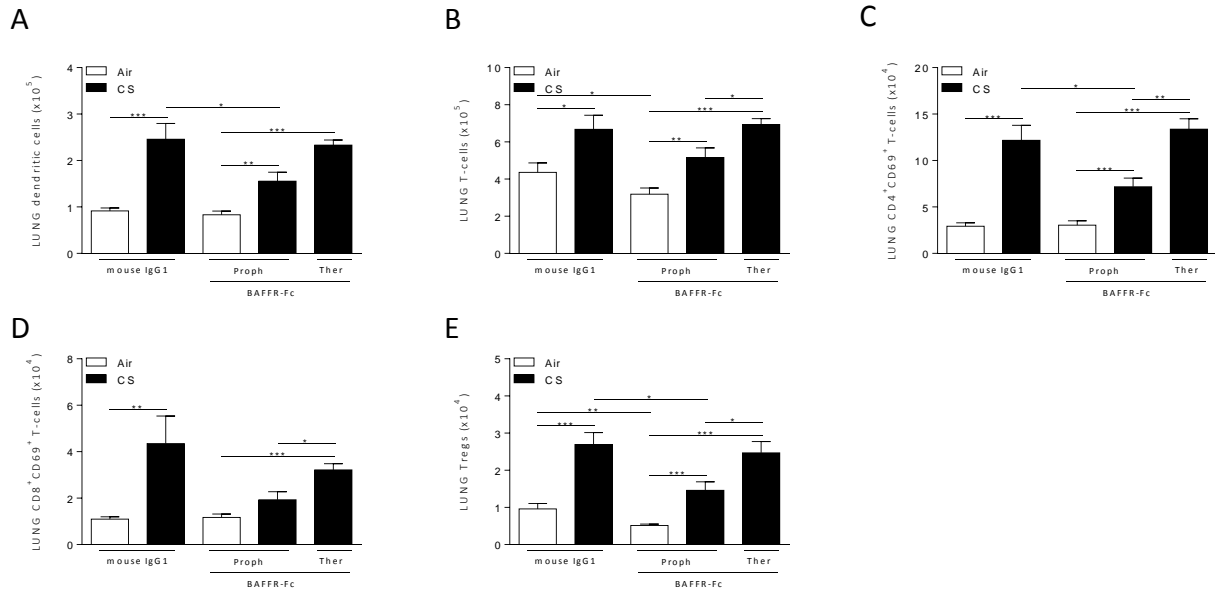
**Figure 6: Prophylactic administration of BAFFR-Fc attenuates the immune response in bronchoalveolar lavage of chronic cigarette smoke-exposed mice.**

Quantification of total bronchoalveolar lavage (BAL) cells (A), BAL macrophages (B), BAL neutrophils (C), BAL dendritic cells (D), BAL T cells (E), BAL CD4<sup>+</sup> T cells (F) and BAL CD8<sup>+</sup> T cells (G).

\* $p < 0.05$ , \*\* $p < 0.01$ , \*\*\* $p < 0.001$

Protein levels of chemokines and cytokines were measured in BAL supernatant. CS exposure induced an increase in KC, RANTES, MCP-1, TNF, IL-6, IFN $\gamma$  and IL-17A in both isotype-treated and BAFFR-Fc-treated groups (Suppl. Table E2). However, no significant differences were detected between the CS-exposed groups.

In lung, CS exposure induced a significant increase in the number of DC, CD3<sup>+</sup> T cells, CD4<sup>+</sup>CD69<sup>+</sup> T cells, CD8<sup>+</sup>CD69<sup>+</sup> T cells and regulatory T cells (Tregs) in the isotype-treated group. Prophylactic BAFFR-Fc administration significantly attenuated the CS-induced increase in DCs, CD4<sup>+</sup>CD69<sup>+</sup> T cells and Tregs, but not in CD8<sup>+</sup>CD69<sup>+</sup> T cells (Fig. 7 A-E).



**Figure 7: Prophylactic administration of BAFFR-Fc results in a decreased number of dendritic cells and altered T cell response in lungs of cigarette smoke-exposed mice.**

Quantification of lung dendritic cells (A), lung T cells (B), lung CD4+CD69+ T cells (C), lung CD8+CD69+ T cells (D) and lung regulatory T cells (E).

\* $p < 0.05$ , \*\* $p < 0.01$ , \*\*\* $p < 0.001$

mRNA expression analysis of 92 target genes on total lung tissue revealed primarily a downregulation of B cell-associated genes in BAFFR-Fc-treated groups, as well as a significant reduction in CTLA4 and IL-12a mRNA levels (Suppl. Table E1).

In addition, protein levels of chemokines and cytokines were measured in lung homogenates. CS exposure induced an increase in KC, MCP-1, MIG, GM-CSF, TNF, IFN $\gamma$ , IL-17A, IL-4 and IL-10 in the isotype-treated group (Suppl. Table E3). The CS-induced increase in GM-CSF protein levels was significantly attenuated in groups treated prophylactically and therapeutically with BAFFR-Fc (Suppl. Table E3).

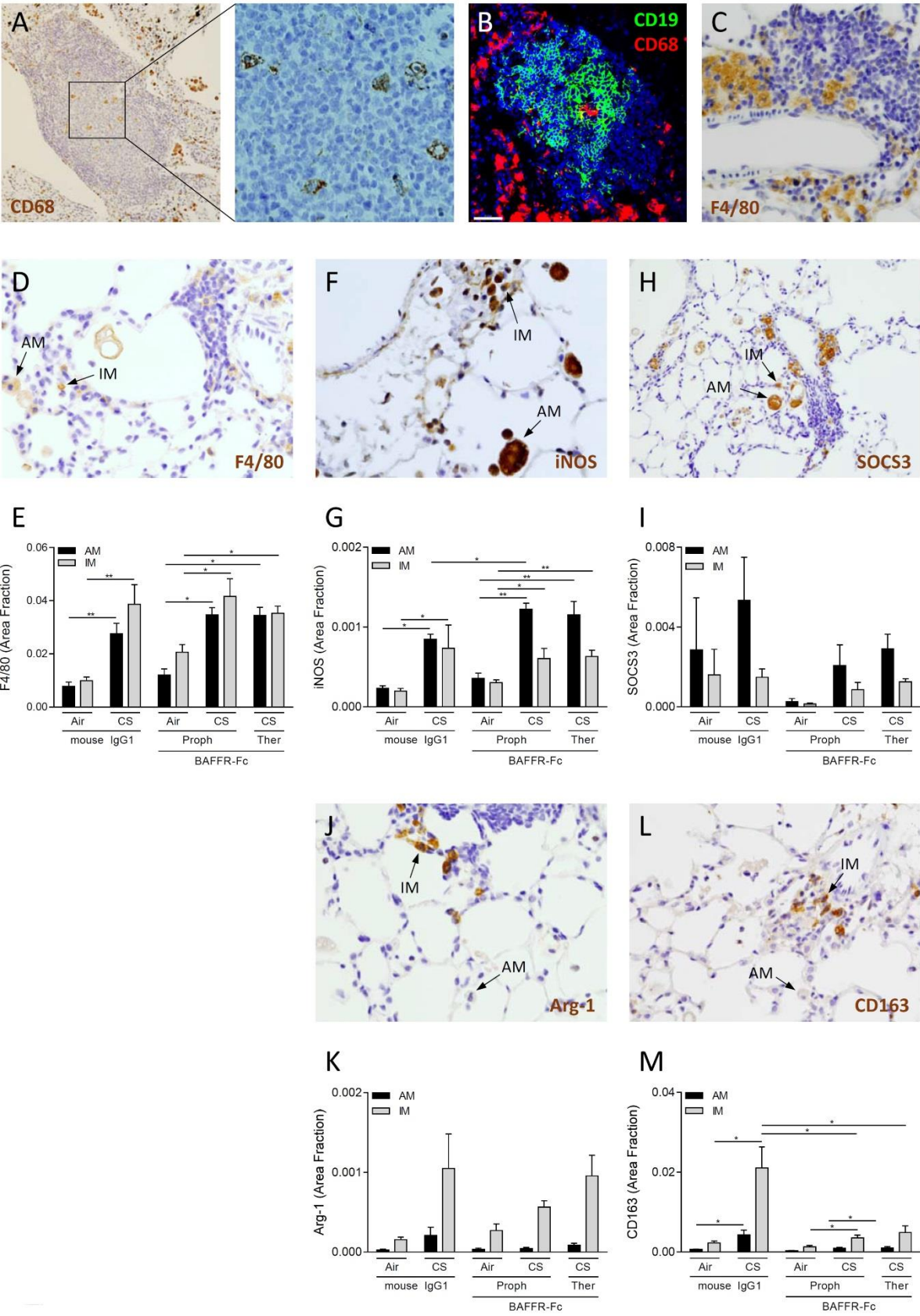
#### *Antagonizing BAFF alters the macrophage phenotype in the lung*

In lungs of patients with COPD, CD68-positive macrophages were detected in and around lymphoid follicles (Fig 8 A-B). In accordance, F4/80-positive macrophages were localized in lymphoid follicles of mice exposed to 24 weeks of CS (Fig. 8 C).

In order to determine the macrophage phenotype, cross-sections of the left lung of mice were stained with anti-F4/80, anti-iNOS, anti-SOCS3, anti-CD163 and anti-Arginase-1 antibodies. Alveolar and interstitial macrophages stained equally positive for the pan-macrophage marker F4/80. Interestingly, alveolar

macrophages stained more positive for SOCS3, a marker of M(IFN $\gamma$ )-like phenotype, compared to interstitial macrophages. In contrast, compared to alveolar macrophages, interstitial macrophages stained stronger for Arginase-1 and CD163, both markers of a M(IL-4)-like phenotype (Fig. 8 D-M).

In murine lung, CS induced a significant increase in F4/80-positive alveolar and interstitial macrophages, as well as a significant increase in the number of macrophages positive for the phenotypic markers iNOS and CD163 (Fig. 8 D-M). Antagonizing BAFF did not influence the numbers of F4/80-positive macrophages. However, prophylactic administration of BAFFR-Fc significantly enhanced the CS-induced increase of iNOS-positive alveolar macrophages. In contrast, both prophylactic and therapeutic administration of BAFFR-Fc significantly attenuated the CS-induced increase of CD163-positive interstitial macrophages (Fig. 8 D-M).



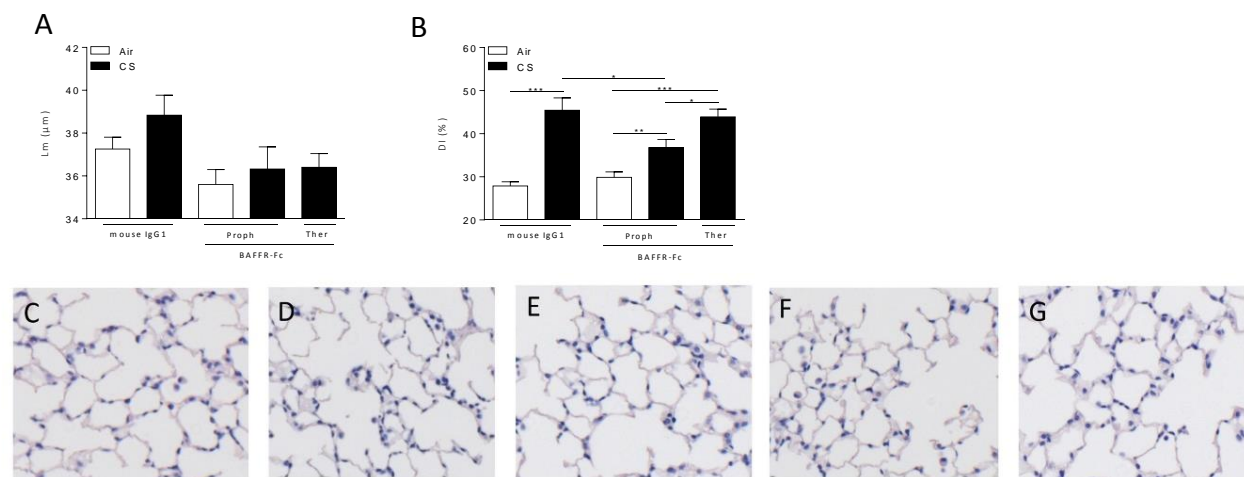


**Figure 8: Macrophage staining in lymphoid follicles in lung tissue of patients with COPD and murine lung and the effect of BAFFR-Fc administration on macrophage phenotype.**

A: Immunohistochemical staining of CD68-positive macrophages in lymphoid follicles in lung tissue of patients with COPD. B: Immunofluorescence staining of CD68-positive macrophages in and around lymphoid follicles of patients with COPD. C: Immunohistochemical staining of F4/80-positive macrophages in lymphoid follicles in lung tissue of CS-exposed mice. D: Immunohistochemical staining of F4/80-positive macrophages in lung tissue of CS-exposed mice. E: Quantification of F4/80-positive area fraction of alveolar (AM) and interstitial (IM) macrophages. F: Immunohistochemical staining of iNOS-positive macrophages in lung tissue of CS-exposed mice. G: Quantification of iNOS-positive area fraction of alveolar and interstitial macrophages. H: Immunohistochemical staining of SOCS3-positive macrophages in lung tissue of CS-exposed mice. I: Quantification of SOCS3-positive area fraction of alveolar and interstitial macrophages. J: Immunohistochemical staining of Arginase-1-positive macrophages in lung tissue of CS-exposed mice. K: Quantification of Arginase-1-positive area fraction of alveolar and interstitial macrophages. L: Immunohistochemical staining of CD163-positive macrophages in lung tissue of CS-exposed mice. M: Quantification of CD163-positive area fraction of alveolar and interstitial macrophages. \* $p < 0.05$ , \*\* $p < 0.01$

#### *Antagonizing BAFF partially protects mice against alveolar wall destruction*

Emphysema was determined by two complementary methods. The mean linear intercept (Lm) was determined in order to quantify alveolar airspace enlargement. Although the Lm was numerically increased upon CS exposure, no significant changes were observed between the study groups (Fig 9 A). Destruction of alveolar walls was quantified using the destructive index (DI). CS exposure significantly increased the alveolar wall destruction in isotype- and BAFFR-Fc-treated groups. However, prophylactic BAFFR-Fc administration significantly attenuated the CS-induced destruction of alveolar walls (Fig 9 B).



**Figure 9: Prophylactic BAFFR-Fc administration reduces CS-induced alveolar wall destruction.**

A: Mean linear intercept (Lm), B: Destructive index (DI).

Representative images of the parenchyma of isotype-treated, air-exposed mice (C), isotype-treated cigarette smoke-exposed (CS) mice (D), BAFFR-Fc-treated, air-exposed mice (E), prophylactic BAFFR-Fc-treated CS-exposed mice (F), and therapeutic BAFFR-Fc-treated, CS-exposed mice (G). \* $p < 0.05$ , \*\* $p < 0.01$ , \*\*\* $p < 0.001$

## DISCUSSION

In this translational study, we demonstrate elevated BAFF mRNA and protein levels in lung tissue of patients with COPD. Furthermore, confocal imaging illustrates that BAFF is present in the vicinity of both immune and stromal cells in lymphoid follicles of patients with COPD. In addition, immunohistochemical staining of the lung tissue illustrates that macrophages are present in and around lymphoid follicles. Experimentally, antagonizing BAFF in chronic CS-exposed mice dramatically reduced the number of B cells and immunoglobulin levels and completely prevented the formation of lymphoid follicles. Importantly, prophylactic inhibition of BAFF reduced the CS-induced inflammatory response in BAL fluid and lung tissue, reduced the expression of macrophage phenotypic markers and attenuated the CS-induced alveolar wall destruction.

B cell activating factor (BAFF) was discovered in 1999 as a key factor in B cell homeostasis. Soon thereafter, its role in autoimmunity became clear and recently the role of BAFF in several other diseases, such as infection, allergy and hematological and lymphoid cancers, has been described <sup>224</sup>. Several reasons warrant an investigation into the role of BAFF in COPD. First, B cell numbers are increased in patients with COPD <sup>240</sup>. Second, an increased number of ectopic lymphoid follicles consisting mainly of B cells, has been described in patients with severe COPD <sup>44, 242</sup>. And finally, the possibility has been raised that an autoimmune component contributes to the pathogenesis of COPD <sup>206, 242, 270, 325-327</sup>.

Previously, Polverino *et al.* reported higher protein levels of BAFF in lungs of patients with COPD compared to never smokers <sup>263</sup>. We confirmed this finding in our study population both at mRNA and protein level. Interestingly, BAFF mRNA and protein levels were already elevated in smokers without airflow limitation. It should be noted that the gender distribution of our never-smoker and smoker populations are skewed towards respectively a female and male predominance. Immunofluorescence staining and confocal imaging illustrate that BAFF is present in pulmonary lymphoid follicles of patients with COPD, more specifically in the vicinity of B cells, CD4+ cells, conventional dendritic cells, follicular dendritic cells and fibroblastic reticular cells. However, since BAFF appears mainly as a soluble protein <sup>218</sup>, we cannot be absolutely certain that these cells actually produce BAFF. Nevertheless, this is the first time BAFF has been localized in the close surroundings of stromal cells of lymphoid follicles in lungs of patients with COPD, indicating that, once a follicle is organized, a micro-environment is created in which B cell maturation and survival is promoted.

In mice, antagonizing BAFF with a soluble BAFFR-Fc complex resulted in a strong reduction in the number of B cells. This is in line with the fact that BAFF is a necessary survival factor for all mature B cell subsets except memory B cells and a fraction of the B1 B cells <sup>218, 331-333</sup>. Since B1 B cells are confined to specific

anatomic sites <sup>333</sup>, we suggest that the few B cells that are still present in lungs and mediastinal lymph nodes after BAFFR-Fc administration, are memory B cells. As a consequence of the reduction in B cell numbers, the mRNA expression levels of all 3 BAFF receptors are significantly decreased since these receptors are mainly located on B cells. BAFFR-Fc administration also resulted in a downregulation of APRIL mRNA expression levels but did not influence the mRNA expression levels of BAFF. In all BAFFR-Fc-treated groups, the absence of B cells and lymphoid follicles resulted in significantly reduced levels of immunoglobulins, both in BAL fluid and in serum. Although lower immunoglobulin levels suggest an increased susceptibility to infections, this has not been detected in the phase III clinical trials of belimumab, a human monoclonal antibody against BAFF registered for treatment of systemic lupus erythematosus <sup>334, 335</sup>. However, the immunoglobulin levels were more severely decreased in our BAFFR-Fc-treated mice compared to the decrease in immunoglobulins reported in the clinical trials <sup>334</sup>.

Next to the effect on B cells, BAFFR-Fc administration led to an attenuation of the CS-induced inflammatory response in BAL fluid and lung tissue. Especially in BAL, the inflammatory cell count was severely reduced after prophylactic BAFFR-Fc administration.

In recent years, it has become clear that the function of BAFF is not limited to B cell homeostasis but extends to influencing both adaptive and innate immunity <sup>224, 230, 231</sup>. It is suggested that BAFF stimulates DCs in order to attract immune cells to sites of inflammation <sup>336</sup>. In our experiment, antagonizing BAFF resulted in decreased numbers of DCs following CS exposure, both in BAL and lung. It has also been described that BAFF stimulates monocyte survival and differentiation into a macrophage phenotype <sup>231</sup>. Prophylactic administration of BAFFR-Fc in CS exposed mice, decreased the numbers of macrophages in BAL, but not in lung, and reduced the levels of GM-CSF in lung homogenates. Macrophages play a central role in the pathogenesis of COPD <sup>337</sup>. We have demonstrated that macrophages are present in and around lymphoid follicles in lungs of patients with COPD, underlining their ubiquitous presence in the lung. In order to investigate their function in COPD, several studies have reported on the phenotype of macrophages in the disease. However, the reports are ambiguous <sup>96, 338, 339</sup>. In the murine lung, we have observed that both alveolar and interstitial macrophages express F4/80 to the same extent. In contrast, alveolar macrophages express more SOCS3, a marker of a pro-inflammatory (M1) macrophage phenotype, whereas interstitial macrophages express substantially more CD163 and Arginase-1, both markers of an immunoregulatory (M2) macrophage phenotype. This difference in expression pattern may relate to differences in location and function of the two types of tissue-resident macrophages <sup>340</sup>. Exposing mice to CS resulted in higher numbers of F4/80-, iNOS-, CD163- and Arginase-1-positive macrophages. Interestingly, administration of BAFFR-Fc enhanced the CS-induced increase in iNOS-positive alveolar

macrophages, while it almost completely prevented the CS-induced increase in CD163- positive interstitial macrophages.

Several studies have explored the effect of BAFF on T cell function. Sutherland *et al.* observed that BAFF favors Th1 responses and suppresses Th2 responses<sup>230</sup>. In addition, BAFF promotes Th17 and regulatory T cells<sup>229, 341</sup>. Although we did not determine the different T helper subsets, we did measure significantly fewer CD4+CD69+ T cells and regulatory T cells in the prophylactically BAFFR-Fc administered group following CS exposure. However, since BAFF exerts some of its effects on inflammation via a B cell dependent mechanism<sup>229, 341</sup>, it is difficult to distinguish between the direct effects of BAFF and the effects of B cell depletion.

In our experiment, CS-induced destruction of alveolar walls was significantly attenuated by prophylactic BAFFR-Fc administration. This was consistent with lower numbers of macrophages and neutrophils in BAL, two cell types that produce proteolytic enzymes. Importantly, the development of emphysema in C57BL/6 mice is rather mild, suggesting that the early stages of COPD have been evaluated in this experiment. This is different from human COPD, where accumulation of lymphoid follicles is observed in more severe stages of the disease.

Recently, it has been shown that B cell deficient mice are completely protected against CS-induced emphysema<sup>276</sup>. Previously, we demonstrated that neutralization of CXCL13 in chronic CS-exposed mice resulted in the absence of lymphoid follicles without a significant reduction of B cell numbers in the lung. As demonstrated here, BAFF neutralization not only eliminated tertiary follicles, but also led to a significant reduction in B cell numbers in the lung. Interestingly, anti-CXCL13 treatment attenuated the CS-induced alveolar wall destruction, similar to what we observed with BAFF neutralization. Together, the data indicate that organized B cell lymphoid follicles, rather than the mere presence of B cells in lung tissue, contribute to the development of emphysema. As follicles are required for an efficient humoral response this suggests that (auto)antibodies, locally produced in the lungs of CS exposed mice, might contribute to alveolar wall destruction. Our observation that both BAFF and CXCL13 neutralization resulted in significant reductions in immunoglobulins, locally and systemically, may further support this notion.

In conclusion, we have demonstrated that BAFF mRNA and protein levels are increased in patients with COPD. We also illustrated that BAFF is present in lymphoid follicles of patients with COPD, in the vicinity of B cells, CD4<sup>+</sup> cells, dendritic cells, follicular dendritic cells and fibroblastic reticular cells, suggesting that organized lymphoid follicles are niches in which B cell maturation and survival is promoted. By antagonizing BAFF with BAFFR-Fc in CS-exposed mice, we have demonstrated that the immune response to CS exposure is attenuated in absence of BAFF. Furthermore, the phenotype of pulmonary macrophages

is altered after BAFFR-Fc administration. Importantly, antagonizing BAFF partially protects against destruction of lung parenchyma. These novel findings may influence future therapeutic strategies for COPD.



## PART II

### CHAPTER 10: DISCUSSION AND FUTURE PERSPECTIVES

In this translational research work, the mucosal immune response to cigarette smoke is the central theme. We have studied the **innate defense response** by investigating the effect of **mucociliary dysfunction** on cigarette smoke-induced pathology in a murine model of COPD. Next, we studied the effect of **chronic bronchitis** on clinical manifestations of COPD in a large population-based cohort.

Whereas the mucociliary clearance system is the first line of defense against inhaled noxious stimuli, the **adaptive immune response** steps in later in mucosal immunity. This adaptive response is quite extensive with the formation of B cell-rich **lymphoid follicles** which are predominantly formed peri-bronchially. A thought to consider is the possibility that lack of adequate innate immune defense leads to an exaggerated adaptive immune response. In this research, we aimed to investigate the role of the lymphoid follicles by antagonizing **B cell activating factor** (BAFF).

## 10.1 ROLE OF MUCUS DYSFUNCTION IN COPD

### 10.1.1 AIRWAY SURFACE DEHYDRATION AGGRAVATES CIGARETTE SMOKE-INDUCED HALLMARKS OF COPD

Mucociliary dysfunction is evident in individuals with chronic bronchitis, a feature that is highly prevalent in subjects with COPD<sup>124</sup>. Furthermore, unrelated to the presence of chronic bronchitis, mucus obstruction of small airways is cardinal in the pathogenesis of COPD<sup>44</sup>. In recent years, the concept of mucociliary structure, function and physicochemical properties has changed dramatically. It has become clear that adequate hydration of the airway surface liquid, regulated by ion channels, is crucial to maintain the function of this defense mechanism<sup>123</sup>. In patients with COPD, Bodas *et al.* showed that CFTR (cystic fibrosis transmembrane conductance regulator; a Cl<sup>-</sup> channel) protein expression correlates with lung function and inversely correlates with disease severity<sup>342</sup>. Zhao *et al.* confirmed these results and additionally showed that the expression of ENaC – the Na<sup>+</sup> channel - is associated with disease severity<sup>170</sup>. Although these studies imply a functional role for airway surface dehydration in cigarette smoke-induced pathology, this has not been investigated *in vivo*.

To examine whether airway surface dehydration contributes to the development and progression of COPD, we exposed  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice and their wild-type littermates to cigarette smoke. As described by Livraghi *et al.* and Mall *et al.*, we observed airway inflammation, increased numbers of goblet cells, elevated mucin expression and distal airspace enlargement in air-exposed  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice, adding to the notion that mucus stasis is sufficient to trigger inflammation<sup>177, 343</sup>. The synergistic effect of airway surface dehydration and CS exposure, resulted in significantly higher numbers of macrophages, neutrophils and



lymphocytes, especially CD8+ T cells, in  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice compared to their wild-type littermates. Gehrig *et al.* found that neutrophil elastase plays an important role in the development of the airway inflammation, mucin expression and emphysema present in  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice <sup>304</sup>.

Of note, accumulations of lymphocytes were detected in  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice after 8 weeks of CS exposure and have not been detected in wild-type mice after such a relative short exposure period. This suggests that the lack of mucociliary clearance (innate defense) might contribute to the initiation of lymphoid follicles. This might be through an increased susceptibility to infections or through the aggravated airway inflammation which leads to a higher amount of proteases, reactive oxygen intermediates and other products of inflammatory cells that break down lung tissue. This enhanced destruction of lung parenchyma may promote the formation of neo- or self-antigens.

In  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice, an increased number of goblet cells was reported previously and is confirmed in our study <sup>176-178</sup>. Although CS exposure did not induce a further increase of the number of goblet cells, we consistently measured a significant CS-induced upregulation of *Muc5ac* in  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice but not in wild-type littermates, coinciding with the observation that *Muc5ac* rapidly responds to injurious substances <sup>288</sup>. Moderate mucin hypersecretion alone will probably not induce mucociliary dysfunction, since *Muc5ac* overexpressing mice do not exhibit mucus plugging <sup>299</sup>. However, severe hypersecretion or mucin hypersecretion in combination with ion channel impairment will result in a hyperconcentrated mucus layer, because mucins are stored intracellular in dehydrated form and expand enormously by binding H<sub>2</sub>O once secreted <sup>123, 138, 158, 344</sup>. Hyperconcentrated mucus increases the osmotic pressure, resulting in mucus stasis and ultimately adhesion, which predisposes for bacterial infections <sup>125, 344</sup>.

Alongside mucociliary dysfunction and airway inflammation,  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice develop severe emphysema, illustrated in our study by a substantial difference in mean linear intercept and in static and dynamic compliance between transgenic and wild-type mice. As in patients with COPD, MMP12 and neutrophil elastase play key roles in the development of emphysema <sup>300, 304</sup>. Mean linear intercept did not increase significantly following CS exposure, which might be due to the severity of the constitutive emphysema. However, the destructive index, a measure for the degree of alveolar destruction, did significantly increase after subacute CS exposure in  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice whereas no effect was detected in wild-type mice, indicating that in the presence of airway surface dehydration, CS exposure induces accelerated development of emphysema.

Exposing  $\beta$ ENaC-Tg mice to CS allowed us to study the effect of airway surface dehydration *in vivo*, however, this model does include some limitations. Recently, it has become clear that interactions between host and microbiome can steer the inflammatory response <sup>117</sup>. It is likely that the presence of

airway surface dehydration induces alterations in the composition of the microbiome, which might influence the outcome <sup>123, 295</sup>. Next, recent papers show that acidification of airway surface liquid diminishes bacterial killing <sup>139, 345</sup>. Since CS in itself is already quite acidic, it might contribute to the acidification created by the loss of  $\text{HCO}_3^-$  secretion as a consequence of CFTR dysfunction in cigarette smokers <sup>346</sup>. In this model, airway surface dehydration is achieved by  $\text{Na}^+$  hyperabsorption and does not alter  $\text{Cl}^-$  secretion by CFTR and hence, presumably not the  $\text{HCO}_3^-$  secretion, excluding the possibility to research this feature in these mice.

In conclusion, CS exposure of  $\beta\text{ENaC-Tg}$  mice results in significantly increased neutrophilic airway inflammation, mucin expression and alveolar destruction, indicating that airway surface dehydration contributes to the development and progression of COPD.

#### 10.1.2 EPIDEMIOLOGY OF CHRONIC BRONCHITIS IN COPD

Chronic bronchitis, defined as chronic cough and sputum production for at least 3 months per year for 2 consecutive years, is highly prevalent in patients with COPD and to a lesser extend in the general public <sup>147, 182</sup>. Several different definitions have been used, explaining the variability in reported prevalence in part. However, whether the classic definition - as stated above - is used or the less stringent definition of 'chronic phlegm for at least 3 months per year for 2 consecutive years', the effect of chronic bronchitis on clinically important outcomes is similar both in our study and in the PLATINO study <sup>183</sup>.

In the Rotterdam Study, COPD subjects with chronic bronchitis were more frequently current smokers, smoked more pack-years, had a worse quality of life and importantly experienced an accelerated lung function decline. These results corroborate outcomes obtained in other studies, although there is debate concerning the effect on lung function decline <sup>182, 183, 185, 187, 195</sup>. Furthermore, in our study, the presence of chronic bronchitis is also associated with the number of moderate and severe exacerbations per year.

Chronic bronchitis is the result of chronic mucociliary dysfunction, which is associated with bacterial infections <sup>125, 295</sup>. An increased vulnerability for pulmonary infections, has also been demonstrated in epidemiological studies <sup>191</sup>. In healthy mucociliary clearance, bacteria interact with carbohydrates of mucins and are subsequently transported towards the pharynx. The adherence of mucus implies that bacteria are not eliminated and thus chronic bacterial infection is favored <sup>295</sup>. In addition, acidification of airway surface liquid, due to lack of  $\text{HCO}_3^-$  secretion or due to the acidic nature of cigarette smoke itself, impairs bacterial killing <sup>346</sup>. This may explain why subjects with COPD and concomitant chronic bronchitis are more at risk for experiencing COPD exacerbations, since the majority of exacerbations are caused by infections <sup>315, 316</sup>. However, chronic bronchitis is often not a stable feature and the majority of subjects with

chronic bronchitis seem to follow a remitting-relapsing course<sup>314</sup>. This implies that cross-sectional studies or studies with a short follow-up period might not detect associations<sup>347</sup>. The Rotterdam Study allowed us to measure exacerbation rate during a long follow-up period, resulting in the observation that COPD subjects with chronic bronchitis have an increased risk for being a frequent exacerbator.

In the Rotterdam Study, we detected that especially women with COPD and chronic bronchitis have an increased mortality risk. Stratifying for the cause of death revealed that in the presence of chronic bronchitis, subjects with COPD died more frequently due to pulmonary related causes compared to COPD subjects without chronic bronchitis. This might explain the increased mortality risk in women detected here, since it has been observed before that women are more vulnerable for COPD-related death and hospitalizations due to pulmonary infections<sup>187, 318</sup>.

In conclusion, in the Rotterdam Study, a large prospective, population-based cohort study, we have shown that subjects with COPD and concomitant chronic bronchitis have an increased risk for accelerated lung function decline, COPD exacerbations and for being a frequent exacerbator. Furthermore, in the presence of chronic bronchitis, subjects with COPD have an increased risk of mortality and importantly, women with COPD and chronic bronchitis have a higher mortality risk than men with COPD and chronic bronchitis.

#### 10.1.3 MUCOCILIARY DYSFUNCTION: FUTURE PERSPECTIVES

Currently, there is not a satisfying therapy available to treat chronic bronchitis symptoms. Several attempts have been made to increase mucociliary function resulting in, at best, partial improvement of the symptoms. A thorough knowledge of the contributing factors can aid in the search for new therapeutic options. Therefore, it would be interesting to unravel the contribution of airway surface liquid acidification to cigarette smoke-induced chronic bronchitis. In COPD patients with chronic bronchitis, the vulnerability to bacterial infections could potentially be explained by the decreased activity of antimicrobials in the presence of an acidic pH<sup>348</sup>. Reduced pH has been measured in exhaled breath condensate of patients with COPD<sup>349</sup>. Interestingly, ex-smokers with COPD had lower pH values in exhaled breath condensates than current smokers with COPD<sup>350</sup>. Of note, recently it was shown that administration of resolvin D1, a specialized proresolvin lipid mediator, reduced chronic inflammation and emphysema in cigarette smoke-exposed mice<sup>351</sup>. However, mice are less vulnerable to acidification due to lack of H<sup>+</sup>/K<sup>+</sup> adenosine triphosphatase which is present in human airway epithelial cells<sup>139</sup>. With proper correction for acidic pH, these naturally occurring lipid mediators could be a candidate for a new therapeutic option.

Another interesting line of inquiry is the expression and function of Short Palate Lung and Nasal epithelial Clone 1 (SPLUNC1) in patients with COPD. SPLUNC1 is thought to be a soluble volume sensor that regulates the airway surface liquid hydration by inhibiting ENaC. SPLUNC1's capacity to negatively regulate ENaC is pH-sensitive;  $\text{pH} \leq 6.5$  inactivates SPLUNC1<sup>124</sup>. Cleavage of SPLUNC1 results in a peptide, S18, that can inactivate ENaC in a pH-independent manner, and is therefore currently considered a molecule of interest in cystic fibrosis<sup>352</sup>.

Whether or not chronic bronchitis is a pre-stage of COPD for a subgroup of patients is currently extensively discussed. Earlier this year, two papers were published describing the importance of chronic bronchitis in subjects without COPD. Allinson *et al.* analyzed data from the Medical Research Council National Survey of Health and Development and found that chronic mucus hypersecretion in smokers between 36 and 43 years old predisposes for the development of COPD. The longer the mucus hypersecretion was present over 20 years, the greater the impact on lung function decline<sup>314</sup>. In addition, Woodruff *et al.* observed that smokers with respiratory symptoms but without airflow limitation are more vulnerable for respiratory exacerbations and experience more physical limitations than asymptomatic smokers, underlining the impact of respiratory symptoms<sup>353</sup>. Considering that middle-aged symptomatic (ex-)smokers without COPD represent a population which has been excluded from clinical COPD trials, it would be interesting to study the impact of chronic bronchitis in subjects without COPD and determine the impact on several clinically important outcomes such as risk for developing COPD, risk for hospitalization, medication use, risk for cardiovascular disease, mortality... in the Rotterdam Study.

## 10.2 B CELL RICH LYMPHOID FOLLICLES IN COPD

### 10.2.1 ROLE OF B CELL-ACTIVATING FACTOR IN COPD

Along with disease severity, an increased number of B cells and lymphoid follicles are observed in lungs of patients with COPD <sup>44</sup>. Although the demonstration of oligoclonality in the follicular B cells suggests a local antigen-specific immune response, the role of these lymphoid follicles in COPD is still controversial, especially since it is not known which antigens are involved <sup>206, 242</sup>. Different options come to mind why these lymphoid follicles are generated. In a first scenario, these lymphoid follicles are formed in reaction to infections. Lymphoid follicles are predominantly observed in patients with severe and very severe COPD and these patients also experience significantly more acute exacerbations than patients with mild-to-moderate COPD <sup>189</sup>. As discussed before, the majority of exacerbations are infectious by nature <sup>188</sup>. In addition, lymphoid follicles in COPD patients can be a response to the altered microbiome or chronic infection in the lung. The lung microbiome of COPD patients is significantly different from that of control patients <sup>117</sup>. A recent murine study showed that host-microbiome crosstalk favored lymphoid neogenesis <sup>109</sup>. Furthermore, chronic pulmonary infection might predispose for acute exacerbations. Another option is that lymphoid follicles are generated as part of an autoimmune response. Several different auto-antibodies have been described <sup>206, 271, 354</sup>. In addition, an increasing number of studies suggest a crucial role for IL-17A, a cytokine implicated in autoimmunity, in CS-induced pathology <sup>108, 109, 355</sup>. A final alternative that cannot be excluded as long as the inducing antigens are not identified and confirmed, is that the options stated here, might all be valid. Baraldo et al. reported both oligoclonal and polyclonal Ig rearrangements <sup>249</sup>. Moreover, since oligoclonality has only been investigated in small numbers of patients, it is far from certain that all COPD patients generate lymphoid follicles against the same type of antigen <sup>242, 249</sup>. In patients with (very) severe COPD, the immune system has been overstimulated for decades and is perhaps primed to easily form lymphoid follicles. Immune cell-stromal cell interactions might be important in this respect.

In two consecutive experiments, we have attempted to elucidate the functional role of lymphoid follicles in COPD by interrupting their formation. In a first experiment, we prevented lymphoid follicle formation by administering anti-CXCL13 to CS-exposed mice. Prophylactic administration, i.e. from the start of the CS exposure, attenuated CS-induced airway inflammation and alveolar destruction. Although the intervention with anti-CXCL13 prevented the formation of organized follicles, B cell aggregates were still present <sup>246</sup>. Next, we antagonized BAFF by administration of soluble BAFFR-Fc in chronic cigarette smoke-exposed mice. This intervention resulted in almost complete loss of B cells in BAL, lung and mediastinal

lymph nodes, thus preventing the formation of lymphoid follicles and aggregates. As a consequence, immunoglobulin levels in BAL and serum were significantly decreased. Prophylactic administration of BAFFR-Fc, significantly attenuated airway and pulmonary inflammation, to a greater extent than anti-CXCL13 treatment. Furthermore, as did prophylactic anti-CXCL13 treatment, prophylactic administration of BAFFR-Fc partially protected CS-exposed mice against alveolar wall destruction. This indicates that organized lymphoid follicles, rather than the mere presence of B-cells, contribute to the development of emphysema.

The importance of lymphoid follicles in the development and progression of emphysema is recently substantiated by the recent network analysis of lung transcriptomics that identified a B cell signature and lymphoid follicle formation in COPD patients with emphysema but not in those with obstructive bronchiolitis <sup>250</sup>. In addition, the 3D reconstructions of Mori *et al.* show that the majority of lymphoid follicles are in contact with alveolar epithelium and a vast lymphatic vessel network <sup>243</sup>. Moreover, B cell-deficient mice which lack lymphoid follicles, are completely protected against CS-induced development of emphysema <sup>276</sup>. All together, these observations suggest that the antigens inducing lymphoid follicle formation in COPD are likely sampled from within the alveoli and not only from within the airways. Although this does not pin down the identity of the responsible antigens, it narrows down the search and might contribute to determine whether these lymphoid follicles are protective or harmful in the pathogenesis of COPD. Of note, the lack of protection against the development of emphysema by therapeutic administration of anti-CXCL13 or BAFFR-Fc, i.e. administration that starts after 3 months of CS exposure, supports the idea that immunoglobulins contribute to the development of emphysema. In mice, the presence of lymphoid follicles after only 3 months of CS exposure is uncommon; however, immunoglobulins against alveolar antigens may be generated in lung-draining lymph nodes.

In contrast to prophylactic administration of BAFFR-Fc, therapeutic administration did not have an effect on CS-induced inflammation, although B cells and lymphoid follicles were absent and immunoglobulin levels were decreased to the same level as in the prophylactic setting. This discrepancy suggests that during the first 3 months of CS exposure, B cells and/or immunoglobulins play an active role in CS-induced pathology. It has been repeatedly described that B cells modulate inflammatory responses in their capacity of cytokine-secreting and antigen-presenting cells <sup>273-277</sup>. To a lesser extent than dendritic cells, B cells also carry antigen to the lung-draining lymph nodes <sup>356</sup>. Additionally, in the first 3 months of CS exposure, BAFF could have affected the immune response. BAFF is known to promote monocyte survival, dendritic cell activation and skew the T cell response towards a Th1 and Th17 response <sup>229-232</sup>.

Importantly, in lung tissue of patients with COPD, we confirmed the work of Polverino *et al.* and Ladjemi *et al.* by demonstrating an upregulation of BAFF mRNA expression and an elevated BAFF protein level in lung homogenate<sup>263, 264</sup>. We continued to investigate BAFF in patients with COPD by performing a series of co-staining experiments on lymphoid follicles. We co-localized BAFF with stromal and immune cell types. Importantly, we corroborated recent observations that fibroblastic reticular cells contribute to the production of BAFF<sup>227</sup>. The high amount of BAFF staining in lymphoid follicles suggest the generation of a micro-environment that favors B cell maturation and survival.

#### 10.2.2 LYMPHOID FOLLICLES IN COPD: FUTURE PERSPECTIVES

Although substantial progress has been made to elucidate the role of lymphoid follicles in patients with COPD, the inducing antigens are still unknown. Microbiota are suggested to be critical and in that regard it would be interesting to expose germ-free mice chronically to CS. Yadava *et al.* reported that the microbiome promotes the formation of lymphoid follicles in an LPS/elastase model<sup>109</sup>. However, CS is a far more complex stimulus and the chronicity of the exposure might also influence the host-microbiome interactions. By exposing germ-free mice chronically to CS, the contribution of the host-microbiome interactions to the pathogenesis of COPD can be studied. In addition, depletion (either selective or complete, of microbiota in mice chronically exposed to CS, can also contribute to the role of microbiota in the persistence of inflammation and lymphoid follicles.

Stromal cell – immune cell interactions have stepped into the spotlight in chronic inflammatory diseases<sup>254</sup>. Investigating these interactions might help to identify which cell type acts as lymphoid tissue organizer cell and which immune cell acts as lymphoid tissue inducer cell. Furthermore, it is highly possible that stromal cell – immune cell interactions change due to chronic infections of the lung, a feature that is highly prevalent in patients with COPD. The most common bacteria that cause chronic infections in patients with COPD are non-typeable *Haemophilus influenzae* (NTHi), *Moraxella catarrhalis*, *Streptococcus pneumoniae* and *Pseudomonas aeruginosa*<sup>357, 358</sup>. The reaction of the host to the infectious bacteria might play a key role in the pathogenesis of COPD<sup>117</sup>. Therefore, combining co-cultures of stromal cell and immune cells with bacterial lysates or live bacteria can help in elucidating the initiating factors of lymphoid follicle formation.

Finally, lymphoid follicles are important sites for local induction of IgA responses. As mentioned in the introduction, IgA is a crucial component of the mucociliary clearance system. In patients with COPD, increased production of IgA does not translate into increased secretory IgA levels in BAL due to

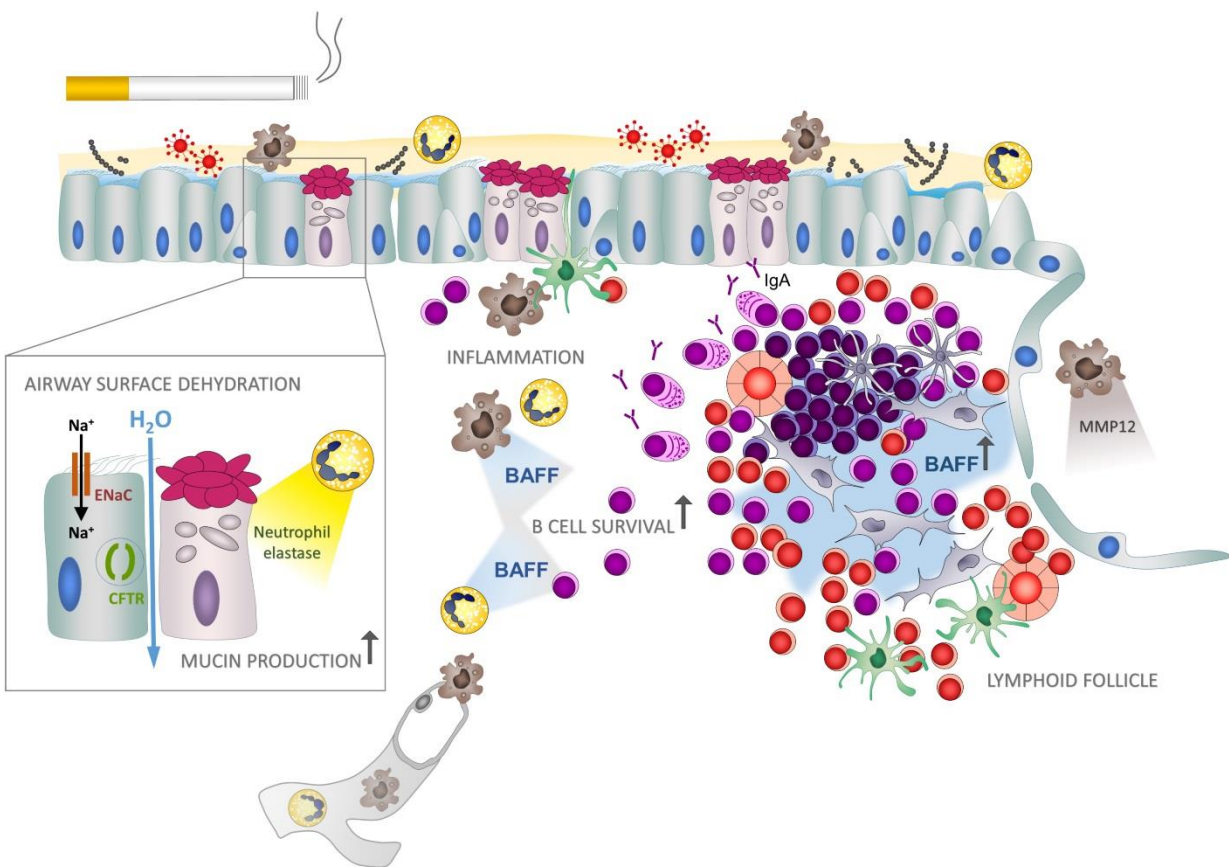
downregulation of the polymeric immunoglobulin receptor<sup>264, 268</sup>. Cigarette smoke exposure of  $\text{pIgR}^{-/-}$  mice can help to unravel the importance of this feature in patients with COPD.

### 10.3 GENERAL CONCLUSION

In conclusion, a functional mucociliary clearance is of utmost importance in host defense. In  $\beta\text{ENaC-Tg}$  mice, airway surface dehydration enhances airway inflammation, mucin expression and alveolar destruction. Furthermore, chronic bronchitis, the clinical discourse of dysfunctional mucociliary clearance, increases the risk of COPD subjects for an accelerated decline of lung function, exacerbations and respiratory mortality.

We have also shown that BAFF is increased in patients with COPD and is highly expressed in lymphoid follicles, indicating the development of a micro-environment that favors B cell maturation and survival. Furthermore, antagonizing BAFF with consequential loss of B cells attenuates pulmonary inflammation and alveolar wall destruction in chronic CS-exposed mice, suggesting a more central role for BAFF, B cells and lymphoid follicles in COPD pathogenesis than considered so far.





**Figure 23: Schematic overview of the research work presented in this thesis.**

Cigarette smoke induces internalization of cystic fibrosis transmembrane conductance regulator (CFTR), leading to loss of  $\text{Cl}^-$  and  $\text{HCO}_3^-$  secretion and stimulation of  $\text{Na}^+$  absorption via the Epithelial Sodium Channel (ENaC). The net result is **airway surface dehydration** and mucus stasis/adherence which aggravates the CS-induced inflammatory response and mucus production.

Innate immune cells produce B cell-activating factor (BAFF) which stimulates B cell survival, maturation and differentiation. In addition, within lymphoid follicles both stromal and immune cells produce BAFF, resulting in an environment that promotes B cell survival and differentiation. The presence of organized **lymphoid follicles** aggravates airway and pulmonary inflammation and alveolar wall destruction.



## PART II

### CHAPTER 11: SUMMARY / SAMENVATTING

## SUMMARY

Chronic obstructive pulmonary disease (COPD) is a highly prevalent, disabling disease, affecting more than 200 million people worldwide. COPD is characterised by an abnormal inflammatory reaction and destruction of lung tissue in response to noxious particles and gases, most commonly cigarette smoke. The main symptoms are progressive and persistent breathlessness accompanied by chronic cough and sputum.

In healthy individuals, the mucociliary clearance system captures inhaled noxious substances and transports them towards the pharynx. Chronic cigarette smoke exposure compromises the function of this system by increasing mucus production and altering the activity of ion channels, both leading to dehydration of the airway surface liquid. We have studied the effect of airway surface dehydration on cigarette smoke-induced pathology in a murine model of COPD. The presence of airway surface dehydration aggravated airway and pulmonary inflammation, increased mucin expression and aggravated destruction of alveolar tissue.

Chronic bronchitis, the clinical manifestation of dysfunctional mucociliary clearance, is common in subjects with COPD. We investigated whether the presence of chronic bronchitis in COPD subjects altered the risk for acute worsening of COPD and mortality. To study this we used data from a large prospective, population-based cohort: the Rotterdam Study. We observed that COPD subjects with chronic bronchitis have an increased risk for acute exacerbations of COPD and an increased risk for respiratory mortality. Interestingly, especially women with COPD and chronic bronchitis have an increased mortality risk.

In a third investigation, we investigated the role of B cell-rich lymphoid follicles in patients with COPD, by antagonizing B cell-activating factor (BAFF), a necessary factor for B cells to survive, mature and differentiate. First, we studied the expression and localisation of BAFF in patients with COPD. We determined that both stromal cells and immune cells in lymphoid follicles produce BAFF, thus supporting the survival of B cells. Next, we antagonized BAFF in mice that were chronically exposed to cigarette smoke. We observed that antagonizing BAFF resulted in complete loss of B cells and lymphoid follicles and attenuated pulmonary inflammation and destruction of alveolar tissue. We concluded that B cells and BAFF mediate pulmonary inflammation and that organized lymphoid follicles are important in the development of emphysema.

## SAMENVATTING

Chronisch obstructief longlijden (COPD) is een zeer frequent voorkomende ziekte die wereldwijd meer dan 200 miljoen mensen treft. COPD wordt gekenmerkt door een abnormale ontstekingsreactie en afbraak van longweefsel na langdurige inhalatie van schadelijke gassen en partikels, meestal sigarettenrook. De voornaamste symptomen zijn progressieve en continue kortademigheid, samen met chronische hoest en slijm productie.

In gezonde luchtwegen zorgt het mucociliair systeem voor het vangen en verwijderen van schadelijke substanties. Chronische blootstelling aan rook compromitteert de functie van dit systeem door de werking van de ionenkanalen aan te tasten en de productie van slijm te verhogen, met dehydratie van de vochtlaag die de luchtwegen bedekt, als gevolg. Wij hebben het effect van dehydratie van het luchtwegoppervlak op sigarettenrook-geïnduceerde pathologie onderzocht in een muismodel. Onze studie wijst uit dat dehydratie van het luchtwegoppervlak bijdraagt tot de ontstekingsreactie in de luchtwegen, expressie van mucines en beschadiging van longweefsel in reactie op sigarettenrook.

Dysfunctionele mucociliaire klaring uit zich klinisch als chronische bronchitis en is veelvoorkomend in personen met COPD. We hebben nagegaan of de aanwezigheid van chronische bronchitis in personen met COPD het risico verhoogt op plotse verergeringen van COPD en mortaliteit. Om dit te bestuderen hebben we gebruik gemaakt van gegevens uit de Rotterdam Studie, een grote cohort studie bij de algemene bevolking. De studie toont aan dat mensen met COPD en chronische bronchitis een verhoogde kans hebben op acute verergeringen van hun COPD symptomen en een verhoogd risico op sterfte door longaandoeningen. Deze studie wijst ook uit dat vooral vrouwen met COPD en chronische bronchitis een verhoogd risico op exacerbaties en sterfte hebben.

In een derde onderzoek hebben we de rol van lymfoïde follikels in patiënten met COPD onderzocht. B cellen zijn de voornaamste cellen in deze lymfoïde follikels en zijn afhankelijk van B cell-activating factor (BAFF) voor hun overleving, maturatie en differentiatie. Eerst hebben we de expressie en lokalisatie van BAFF in patiënten met COPD bestudeerd. We stelden vast dat zowel stromale als immuun cellen in lymfoïde follikels BAFF produceren en zodoende een gunstig microklimaat genereren dat de overleving van B cellen stimuleert. Vervolgens hebben we BAFF geantagoniseerd in muizen die chronisch aan rook werden blootgesteld. Het antagoniseren van BAFF leidde tot verlies van B cellen en lymfoïde follikels en verminderde de ontstekingsreactie in luchtwegen en de afbraak van longweefsel. We concludeerden dat BAFF en B cellen de ontstekingsreactie in de longen mediëren en dat georganiseerde lymfoïde follikels bijdragen tot de ontwikkeling van emfyseem.



## PART III

## ADDENDUM

## REFERENCES

1. WHO. Burden of disease. (accessed April 2016) [cited 2016 April]. Available from: [http://www.who.int/topics/global\\_burden\\_of\\_disease/en/](http://www.who.int/topics/global_burden_of_disease/en/).
2. Vestbo J, Hurd SS, Agusti AG, Jones PW, Vogelmeier C, Anzueto A, Barnes PJ, Fabbri LM, Martinez FJ, Nishimura M, Stockley RA, Sin DD, Rodriguez-Roisin R. Global strategy for the diagnosis, management, and prevention of chronic obstructive pulmonary disease: GOLD executive summary. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2013; 187: 347-365.
3. Global initiative for Obstructive Lung Diseases. Global strategy for the diagnosis, management, and prevention of Chronic Obstructive Pulmonary Disease (updated 2016). accessed April 2016 [cited 2016 April]. Available from: [http://www.goldcopd.org/uploads/users/files/WatermarkedGlobal%20Strategy%202016\(1\).pdf](http://www.goldcopd.org/uploads/users/files/WatermarkedGlobal%20Strategy%202016(1).pdf).
4. Brusselle GG, Joos GF, Bracke KR. New insights into the immunology of chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *Lancet* 2011; 378: 1015-1026.
5. Salvi SS, Barnes PJ. Chronic obstructive pulmonary disease in non-smokers. *Lancet* 2009; 374: 733-743.
6. Pauwels RA, Rabe KF. Burden and clinical features of chronic obstructive pulmonary disease (COPD). *Lancet* 2004; 364: 613-620.
7. Brusselle GG, Bracke KR. Elucidating COPD pathogenesis by large-scale genetic analyses. *Lancet Respir Med* 2015; 3: 737-739.
8. Loth DW, Soler Artigas M, Gharib SA, Wain LV, Franceschini N, Koch B, Pottinger TD, Smith AV, Duan Q, Oldmeadow C, Lee MK, Strachan DP, James AL, Huffman JE, Vitart V, Ramasamy A, Wareham NJ, Kaprio J, Wang XQ, Trochet H, Kahonen M, Flexeder C, Albrecht E, Lopez LM, de Jong K, et al. Genome-wide association analysis identifies six new loci associated with forced vital capacity. *Nat Genet* 2014; 46: 669-677.
9. Soler Artigas M, Loth DW, Wain LV, Gharib SA, Obeidat M, Tang W, Zhai G, Zhao JH, Smith AV, Huffman JE, Albrecht E, Jackson CM, Evans DM, Cadby G, Fornage M, Manichaikul A, Lopez LM, Johnson T, Aldrich MC, Aspelund T, Barroso I, Campbell H, Cassano PA, Couper DJ, Eiriksdottir G, et al. Genome-wide association and large-scale follow up identifies 16 new loci influencing lung function. *Nat Genet* 2011; 43: 1082-1090.
10. Wain LV, Shrine N, Miller S, Jackson VE, Ntalla I, Soler Artigas M, Billington CK, Kheirallah AK, Allen R, Cook JP, Probert K, Obeidat M, Bosse Y, Hao K, Postma DS, Pare PD, Ramasamy A, Magi R, Mihailov E, Reinmaa E, Melen E, O'Connell J, Frangou E, Delaneau O, Freeman C, et al. Novel insights into the genetics of smoking behaviour, lung function, and chronic obstructive pulmonary disease (UK BiLEVE): a genetic association study in UK Biobank. *Lancet Respir Med* 2015; 3: 769-781.
11. Hancox RJ, Poulton R, Greene JM, McLachlan CR, Pearce MS, Sears MR. Associations between birth weight, early childhood weight gain and adult lung function. *Thorax* 2009; 64: 228-232.
12. Mercado N, Ito K, Barnes PJ. Accelerated ageing of the lung in COPD: new concepts. *Thorax* 2015; 70: 482-489.
13. De Smet EG, Mestdagh P, Vandesompele J, Brusselle GG, Bracke KR. Non-coding RNAs in the pathogenesis of COPD. *Thorax* 2015; 70: 782-791.
14. Celli BR, Decramer M, Wedzicha JA, Wilson KC, Agusti A, Criner GJ, MacNee W, Make BJ, Rennard SI, Stockley RA, Vogelmeier C, Anzueto A, Au DH, Barnes PJ, Burgel PR, Calverley PM, Casanova C, Clini EM, Cooper CB, Coxson HO, Dusser DJ, Fabbri LM, Fahy B, Ferguson GT, Fisher A, et al. An official American Thoracic Society/European Respiratory Society statement: research questions in COPD. *Eur Respir J* 2015; 45: 879-905.
15. Decramer M, Janssens W, Miravitlles M. Chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *Lancet* 2012; 379: 1341-1351.



16. European Respiratory Society. The European lung white book.: European Respiratory Society; 2013.
17. WHO. Tobacco. accessed April 2016. Available from: <http://www.who.int/mediacentre/factsheets/fs339/en/>.
18. Afonso AS, Verhamme KM, Sturkenboom MC, Brusselle GG. COPD in the general population: prevalence, incidence and survival. *Respir Med* 2011; 105: 1872-1884.
19. Behrendt CE. Mild and moderate-to-severe COPD in nonsmokers: distinct demographic profiles. *Chest* 2005; 128: 1239-1244.
20. Beasley R, Weatherall M, Travers J, Shirtcliffe P. Time to define the disorders of the syndrome of COPD. *Lancet* 2009; 374: 670-672.
21. Han MK, Agusti A, Calverley PM, Celli BR, Criner G, Curtis JL, Fabbri LM, Goldin JG, Jones PW, Macnee W, Make BJ, Rabe KF, Rennard SI, Sciurba FC, Silverman EK, Vestbo J, Washko GR, Wouters EF, Martinez FJ. Chronic obstructive pulmonary disease phenotypes: the future of COPD. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2010; 182: 598-604.
22. Stoller JK, Aboussouan LS. A review of alpha1-antitrypsin deficiency. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2012; 185: 246-259.
23. Silverman EK, Sandhaus RA. Clinical practice. Alpha1-antitrypsin deficiency. *N Engl J Med* 2009; 360: 2749-2757.
24. Donaldson GC, Seemungal TA, Bhowmik A, Wedzicha JA. Relationship between exacerbation frequency and lung function decline in chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *Thorax* 2002; 57: 847-852.
25. Seemungal TA, Donaldson GC, Paul EA, Bestall JC, Jeffries DJ, Wedzicha JA. Effect of exacerbation on quality of life in patients with chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 1998; 157: 1418-1422.
26. Wedzicha JA, Seemungal TAR. COPD exacerbations: defining their cause and prevention. *Lancet* 2007; 370: 786.
27. Martinez CH, Han MK. Contribution of the environment and comorbidities to chronic obstructive pulmonary disease phenotypes. *Med Clin North Am* 2012; 96: 713-727.
28. Fishman A, Martinez F, Naunheim K, Piantadosi S, Wise R, Ries A, Weinmann G, Wood DE. A randomized trial comparing lung-volume-reduction surgery with medical therapy for severe emphysema. *N Engl J Med* 2003; 348: 2059-2073.
29. Sundh J, Johansson G, Larsson K, Linden A, Lofdahl CG, Sandstrom T, Janson C. The phenotype of concurrent chronic bronchitis and frequent exacerbations in patients with severe COPD attending Swedish secondary care units. *Int J Chron Obstruct Pulmon Dis* 2015; 10: 2327-2334.
30. Burgel PR, Nesme-Meyer P, Chanez P, Caillaud D, Carre P, Perez T, Roche N. Cough and sputum production are associated with frequent exacerbations and hospitalizations in COPD subjects. *Chest* 2009; 135: 975-982.
31. Agusti A, Barnes PJ. Update in chronic obstructive pulmonary disease 2011. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2012; 185: 1171-1176.
32. Agusti A, Calverley PM, Celli B, Coxson HO, Edwards LD, Lomas DA, MacNee W, Miller BE, Rennard S, Silverman EK, Tal-Singer R, Wouters E, Yates JC, Vestbo J. Characterisation of COPD heterogeneity in the ECLIPSE cohort. *Respir Res* 2010; 11: 122.
33. Barnes PJ, Celli BR. Systemic manifestations and comorbidities of COPD. *Eur Respir J* 2009; 33: 1165-1185.
34. Lahousse L, Niemeijer MN, van den Berg ME, Rijnbeek PR, Joos GF, Hofman A, Franco OH, Deckers JW, Eijgelsheim M, Stricker BH, Brusselle GG. Chronic obstructive pulmonary disease and sudden cardiac death: the Rotterdam study. *Eur Heart J* 2015; 36: 1754-1761.
35. Lahousse L, van den Bouwhuisen QJ, Loth DW, Joos GF, Hofman A, Witteman JC, van der Lugt A, Brusselle GG, Stricker BH. Chronic obstructive pulmonary disease and lipid core carotid artery plaques in the elderly: the Rotterdam Study. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2013; 187: 58-64.

36. Lahousse L, Ziere G, Verlinden VJ, Zillikens MC, Uitterlinden AG, Rivadeneira F, Tiemeier H, Joos GF, Hofman A, Ikram MA, Franco OH, Brusselle GG, Stricker BH. Risk of Frailty in Elderly With COPD: A Population-Based Study. *J Gerontol A Biol Sci Med Sci* 2016; 71: 689-695.
37. Portegies ML, Lahousse L, Joos GF, Hofman A, Koudstaal PJ, Stricker BH, Brusselle GG, Ikram MA. Chronic Obstructive Pulmonary Disease and the Risk of Stroke. The Rotterdam Study. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2016; 193: 251-258.
38. Hogg JC. Pathophysiology of airflow limitation in chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *Lancet* 2004; 364: 709-721.
39. Munoz-Esquerre M, Lopez-Sanchez M, Escobar I, Huertas D, Penin R, Molina-Molina M, Manresa F, Dorca J, Santos S. Systemic and Pulmonary Vascular Remodelling in Chronic Obstructive Pulmonary Disease. *PloS one* 2016; 11: e0152987.
40. Fahy JV, Dickey BF. Airway mucus function and dysfunction. *N Engl J Med* 2010; 363: 2233-2247.
41. Leopold PL, O'Mahony MJ, Lian XJ, Tilley AE, Harvey BG, Crystal RG. Smoking is associated with shortened airway cilia. *PloS one* 2009; 4: e8157.
42. Verra F, Escudier E, Lebargy F, Bernaudin JF, De Cremoux H, Bignon J. Ciliary abnormalities in bronchial epithelium of smokers, ex-smokers, and nonsmokers. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 1995; 151: 630-634.
43. Satta M, Turato G, Baraldo S, Zanin A, Braccioni F, Mapp CE, Maestrelli P, Cavalese G, Papi A, Fabbri LM. Goblet cell hyperplasia and epithelial inflammation in peripheral airways of smokers with both symptoms of chronic bronchitis and chronic airflow limitation. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2000; 161: 1016-1021.
44. Hogg JC, Chu F, Utokaparch S, Woods R, Elliott WM, Buzatu L, Cherniack RM, Rogers RM, Sciurba FC, Coxson HO, Pare PD. The nature of small-airway obstruction in chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *N Engl J Med* 2004; 350: 2645-2653.
45. Satta M, Turato G, Maestrelli P, Mapp CE, Fabbri LM. Cellular and structural bases of chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2001; 163: 1304-1309.
46. Hogg JC, McDonough JE, Suzuki M. Small airway obstruction in COPD: new insights based on micro-CT imaging and MRI imaging. *Chest* 2013; 143: 1436-1443.
47. McDonough JE, Yuan R, Suzuki M, Seyednejad N, Elliott WM, Sanchez PG, Wright AC, Geffer WB, Litzky L, Coxson HO, Paré PD, Sin DD, Pierce RA, Woods JC, McWilliams AM, Mayo JR, Lam SC, Cooper JD, Hogg JC. Small-Airway Obstruction and Emphysema in Chronic Obstructive Pulmonary Disease. *N Engl J Med* 2011; 365: 1567-1575.
48. Demedts IK, Demoor T, Bracke KR, Joos GF, Brusselle GG. Role of apoptosis in the pathogenesis of COPD and pulmonary emphysema. *Respir Res* 2006; 7: 53.
49. Sly PD, Bush A. From the Cradle to the Grave: The Early-Life Origins of Chronic Obstructive Pulmonary Disease. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2016; 193: 1-2.
50. Svanes C, Sunyer J, Plana E, Dharmage S, Heinrich J, Jarvis D, de Marco R, Norback D, Raheison C, Villani S, Wjst M, Svanes K, Anto JM. Early life origins of chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *Thorax* 2010; 65: 14-20.
51. Cosio MG, Satta M, Agusti A. Immunologic aspects of chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *N Engl J Med* 2009; 360: 2445-2454.
52. Stampfli MR, Anderson GP. How cigarette smoke skews immune responses to promote infection, lung disease and cancer. *Nat Rev Immunol* 2009; 9: 377-384.
53. Zhai G, Valdes AM, Cherkas L, Clement G, Strachan D, Spector TD. The interaction of genes and smoking on forced expiratory volume: a classic twin study. *Chest* 2007; 132: 1772-1777.
54. Hunninghake GM, Cho MH, Tesfaygi Y, Soto-Quiros ME, Avila L, Lasky-Su J, Stidley C, Melen E, Soderhall C, Hallberg J, Kull I, Kere J, Svartengren M, Pershagen G, Wickman M, Lange C, Demeo DL, Hersh

- CP, Klanderman BJ, Raby BA, Sparrow D, Shapiro SD, Silverman EK, Litonjua AA, Weiss ST, et al. MMP12, lung function, and COPD in high-risk populations. *N Engl J Med* 2009; 361: 2599-2608.
55. Brusselle GG. Matrix metalloproteinase 12, asthma, and COPD. *N Engl J Med* 2009; 361: 2664-2665.
  56. Thorgeirsson TE, Gudbjartsson DF, Surakka I, Vink JM, Amin N, Geller F, Sulem P, Rafnar T, Esko T, Walter S, Gieger C, Rawal R, Mangino M, Prokopenko I, Magi R, Keskitalo K, Gudjonsdottir IH, Gretarsdottir S, Stefansson H, Thompson JR, Aulchenko YS, Nelis M, Aben KK, den Heijer M, Dirksen A, et al. Sequence variants at CHRN3-CHRNA6 and CYP2A6 affect smoking behavior. *Nat Genet* 2010; 42: 448-453.
  57. Tobacco, Genetics C. Genome-wide meta-analyses identify multiple loci associated with smoking behavior. *Nat Genet* 2010; 42: 441-447.
  58. Van Pottelberge GR, Mestdagh P, Bracke KR, Thas O, van Durme YM, Joos GF, Vandesompele J, Brusselle GG. MicroRNA expression in induced sputum of smokers and patients with chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2011; 183: 898-906.
  59. Barrero CA, Perez-Leal O, Aksoy M, Moncada C, Ji R, Lopez Y, Mallilankaraman K, Madesh M, Criner GJ, Kelsen SG, Merali S. Histone 3.3 participates in a self-sustaining cascade of apoptosis that contributes to the progression of chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2013; 188: 673-683.
  60. Fletcher C, Peto R. The natural history of chronic airflow obstruction. *Br Med J* 1977; 1: 1645-1648.
  61. Postma DS, Bush A, van den Berge M. Risk factors and early origins of chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *Lancet* 2015; 385: 899-909.
  62. Tagiyeva N, Devereux G, Fielding S, Turner S, Douglas G. Outcomes of Childhood Asthma and Wheezy Bronchitis. A 50-Year Cohort Study. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2016; 193: 23-30.
  63. Lange P, Celli B, Agusti A, Boje Jensen G, Divo M, Faner R, Guerra S, Marott JL, Martinez FD, Martinez-Camblor P, Meek P, Owen CA, Petersen H, Pinto-Plata V, Schnohr P, Sood A, Soriano JB, Tesfaigzi Y, Vestbo J. Lung-Function Trajectories Leading to Chronic Obstructive Pulmonary Disease. *N Engl J Med* 2015; 373: 111-122.
  64. Whitsett JA, Alenghat T. Respiratory epithelial cells orchestrate pulmonary innate immunity. *Nat Immunol* 2015; 16: 27-35.
  65. Holtzman MJ, Byers DE, Alexander-Brett J, Wang X. The role of airway epithelial cells and innate immune cells in chronic respiratory disease. *Nat Rev Immunol* 2014; 14: 686-698.
  66. Pouwels SD, Heijink IH, ten Hacken NH, Vandenabeele P, Krysko DV, Nawijn MC, van Oosterhout AJ. DAMPs activating innate and adaptive immune responses in COPD. *Mucosal Immunol* 2014; 7: 215-226.
  67. Heijink IH, Brandenburg SM, Postma DS, van Oosterhout AJ. Cigarette smoke impairs airway epithelial barrier function and cell-cell contact recovery. *Eur Respir J* 2012; 39: 419-428.
  68. Pouwels SD, Zijlstra GJ, van der Toorn M, Hesse L, Gras R, Ten Hacken NH, Krysko DV, Vandenabeele P, de Vries M, van Oosterhout AJ, Heijink IH, Nawijn MC. Cigarette smoke-induced necroptosis and DAMP release trigger neutrophilic airway inflammation in mice. *Am J Physiol Lung Cell Mol Physiol* 2016; 310: L377-386.
  69. Ferhani N, Letuve S, Kozhich A, Thibaudeau O, Grandsaigne M, Maret M, Dombret MC, Sims GP, Kolbeck R, Coyle AJ, Aubier M, Pretolani M. Expression of high-mobility group box 1 and of receptor for advanced glycation end products in chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2010; 181: 917-927.
  70. Heijink IH, Pouwels SD, Leijendekker C, de Bruin HG, Zijlstra GJ, van der Vaart H, ten Hacken NH, van Oosterhout AJ, Nawijn MC, van der Toorn M. Cigarette smoke-induced damage-associated molecular pattern release from necrotic neutrophils triggers proinflammatory mediator release. *Am J Respir Cell Mol Biol* 2015; 52: 554-562.

71. Lommatzsch M, Cicko S, Muller T, Lucattelli M, Bratke K, Stoll P, Grimm M, Durk T, Zissel G, Ferrari D, Di Virgilio F, Soricther S, Lungarella G, Virchow JC, Idzko M. Extracellular adenosine triphosphate and chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2010; 181: 928-934.
72. Barnes PJ. The cytokine network in chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *Am J Respir Cell Mol Biol* 2009; 41: 631-638.
73. Nourshargh S, Alon R. Leukocyte migration into inflamed tissues. *Immunity* 2014; 41: 694-707.
74. Peleman RA, Rytala PH, Kips JC, Joos GF, Pauwels RA. The cellular composition of induced sputum in chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *Eur Respir J* 1999; 13: 839-843.
75. Di Stefano A, Capelli A, Lusuadi M, Balbo P, Vecchio C, Maestrelli P, Mapp CE, Fabbri LM, Donner CF, Saetta M. Severity of airflow limitation is associated with severity of airway inflammation in smokers. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 1998; 158: 1277-1285.
76. Maestrelli P, Saetta M, Mapp CE, Fabbri LM. Remodeling in response to infection and injury. Airway inflammation and hypersecretion of mucus in smoking subjects with chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2001; 164: S76-80.
77. Baraldo S, Turato G, Badin C, Bazzan E, Beghe B, Zuin R, Calabrese F, Casoni G, Maestrelli P, Papi A, Fabbri LM, Saetta M. Neutrophilic infiltration within the airway smooth muscle in patients with COPD. *Thorax* 2004; 59: 308-312.
78. O'Donnell RA, Peebles C, Ward JA, Daraker A, Angco G, Broberg P, Pierrou S, Lund J, Holgate ST, Davies DE, Delany DJ, Wilson SJ, Djukanovic R. Relationship between peripheral airway dysfunction, airway obstruction, and neutrophilic inflammation in COPD. *Thorax* 2004; 59: 837-842.
79. Paone G, Conti V, Vestri A, Leone A, Puglisi G, Benassi F, Brunetti G, Schmid G, Cammarella I, Terzano C. Analysis of sputum markers in the evaluation of lung inflammation and functional impairment in symptomatic smokers and COPD patients. *Dis Markers* 2011; 31: 91-100.
80. Betsuyaku T, Nishimura M, Takeyabu K, Tanino M, Venge P, Xu S, Kawakami Y. Neutrophil granule proteins in bronchoalveolar lavage fluid from subjects with subclinical emphysema. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 1999; 159: 1985-1991.
81. Mantovani A, Cassatella MA, Costantini C, Jaillon S. Neutrophils in the activation and regulation of innate and adaptive immunity. *Nat Rev Immunol* 2011; 11: 519-531.
82. Hoenderdos K, Condliffe A. The neutrophil in chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *Am J Respir Cell Mol Biol* 2013; 48: 531-539.
83. O'Donnell R, Breen D, Wilson S, Djukanovic R. Inflammatory cells in the airways in COPD. *Thorax* 2006; 61: 448-454.
84. MacNee W. Pulmonary and Systemic Oxidant/Antioxidant Imbalance in Chronic Obstructive Pulmonary Disease. *Proc Am Thorac Soc* 2005; 2: 50-60.
85. Stringer KA, Tobias M, O'Neill HC, Franklin CC. Cigarette smoke extract-induced suppression of caspase-3-like activity impairs human neutrophil phagocytosis. *Am J Physiol Lung Cell Mol Physiol* 2007; 292: L1572-1579.
86. Obermayer A, Stoiber W, Krautgartner WD, Klappacher M, Kofler B, Steinbacher P, Vitkov L, Grabcanovic-Musija F, Studnicka M. New aspects on the structure of neutrophil extracellular traps from chronic obstructive pulmonary disease and in vitro generation. *PloS one* 2014; 9: e97784.
87. Mantovani A. Pentraxin-3 in COPD: innocent bystander or amplifier? *Eur Respir J* 2012; 39: 795-796.
88. Van Pottelberge GR, Bracke KR, Pauwels NS, Vermassen FE, Joos GF, Brusselle GG. COPD is associated with reduced pulmonary interstitial expression of pentraxin-3. *Eur Respir J* 2012; 39: 830-838.
89. Hussell T, Bell TJ. Alveolar macrophages: plasticity in a tissue-specific context. *Nat Rev Immunol* 2014; 14: 81-93.
90. Vlahos R, Bozinovski S. Role of alveolar macrophages in chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *Front Immunol* 2014; 5: 435.

91. Byrne AJ, Mathie SA, Gregory LG, Lloyd CM. Pulmonary macrophages: key players in the innate defence of the airways. *Thorax* 2015; 70: 1189-1196.
92. Finkelstein R, Fraser RS, Ghezzi H, Cosio MG. Alveolar inflammation and its relation to emphysema in smokers. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 1995; 152: 1666-1672.
93. Beckett EL, Stevens RL, Jarnicki AG, Kim RY, Hanish I, Hansbro NG, Deane A, Keely S, Horvat JC, Yang M, Oliver BG, van Rooijen N, Inman MD, Adachi R, Soberman RJ, Hamadi S, Wark PA, Foster PS, Hansbro PM. A new short-term mouse model of chronic obstructive pulmonary disease identifies a role for mast cell tryptase in pathogenesis. *J Allergy Clin Immunol* 2013; 131: 752-762.
94. Hodge S, Hodge G, Ahern J, Jersmann H, Holmes M, Reynolds PN. Smoking alters alveolar macrophage recognition and phagocytic ability: implications in chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *Am J Respir Cell Mol Biol* 2007; 37: 748-755.
95. Hodge S, Matthews G, Mukaro V, Ahern J, Shivam A, Hodge G, Holmes M, Jersmann H, Reynolds PN. Cigarette smoke-induced changes to alveolar macrophage phenotype and function are improved by treatment with procysteine. *Am J Respir Cell Mol Biol* 2011; 44: 673-681.
96. Shaykhiev R, Krause A, Salit J, Strulovici-Barel Y, Harvey BG, O'Connor TP, Crystal RG. Smoking-dependent reprogramming of alveolar macrophage polarization: implication for pathogenesis of chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *J Immunol* 2009; 183: 2867-2883.
97. Ballarin A, Bazzan E, Zenteno RH, Turato G, Baraldo S, Zanovello D, Mutti E, Hogg JC, Saetta M, Cosio MG. Mast cell infiltration discriminates between histopathological phenotypes of chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2012; 186: 233-239.
98. De Grove KC, Provoost S, Verhamme FM, Bracke KR, Joos GF, Maes T, Brusselle GG. Characterization and Quantification of Innate Lymphoid Cell Subsets in Human Lung. *PloS one* 2016; 11: e0145961.
99. Demedts IK, Bracke KR, Van Pottelberge G, Testelmans D, Verleden GM, Vermassen FE, Joos GF, Brusselle GG. Accumulation of dendritic cells and increased CCL20 levels in the airways of patients with chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2007; 175: 998-1005.
100. Freeman CM, Martinez FJ, Han MK, Ames TM, Chensue SW, Todt JC, Arenberg DA, Meldrum CA, Getty C, McCloskey L, Curtis JL. Lung dendritic cell expression of maturation molecules increases with worsening chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2009; 180: 1179-1188.
101. Saetta M, Mariani M, Panina-Bordignon P, Turato G, Buonsanti C, Baraldo S, Bellettato CM, Papi A, Corbetta L, Zuin R, Sinigaglia F, Fabbri LM. Increased expression of the chemokine receptor CXCR3 and its ligand CXCL10 in peripheral airways of smokers with chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2002; 165: 1404-1409.
102. Saetta M, Baraldo S, Corbino L, Turato G, Braccioni F, Rea F, Cavallese G, Tropeano G, Mapp CE, Maestrelli P, Ciaccia A, Fabbri LM. CD8+ve cells in the lungs of smokers with chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 1999; 160: 711-717.
103. Saetta M, Di Stefano A, Turato G, Facchini FM, Corbino L, Mapp CE, Maestrelli P, Ciaccia A, Fabbri LM. CD8+ T-lymphocytes in peripheral airways of smokers with chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 1998; 157: 822-826.
104. Chrysafakis G, Tzanakis N, Kyriakoy D, Tsoumakidou M, Tsiligianni I, Klimathianaki M, Siafakas NM. Perforin expression and cytotoxic activity of sputum CD8+ lymphocytes in patients with COPD. *Chest* 2004; 125: 71-76.
105. Knobloch J, Schild K, Jungck D, Urban K, Muller K, Schweda EK, Rupp J, Koch A. The T-helper cell type 1 immune response to gram-negative bacterial infections is impaired in COPD. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2011; 183: 204-214.
106. Di Stefano A, Caramori G, Gnemmi I, Contoli M, Vicari C, Capelli A, Magno F, D'Anna SE, Zanini A, Brun P, Casolari P, Chung KF, Barnes PJ, Papi A, Adcock I, Balbi B. T helper type 17-related cytokine

- expression is increased in the bronchial mucosa of stable chronic obstructive pulmonary disease patients. *Clin Exp Immunol* 2009; 157: 316-324.
107. Vargas-Rojas MI, Ramirez-Venegas A, Limon-Camacho L, Ochoa L, Hernandez-Zenteno R, Sansores RH. Increase of Th17 cells in peripheral blood of patients with chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *Respir Med* 2011; 105: 1648-1654.
  108. Roos AB, Sanden C, Mori M, Bjermer L, Stampfli MR, Erjefalt JS. IL-17A Is Elevated in End-Stage Chronic Obstructive Pulmonary Disease and Contributes to Cigarette Smoke-induced Lymphoid Neogenesis. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2015; 191: 1232-1241.
  109. Yadava K, Pattaroni C, Sichelstiel AK, Trompette A, Gollwitzer ES, Salami O, von Garnier C, Nicod LP, Marsland BJ. Microbiota Promotes Chronic Pulmonary Inflammation by Enhancing IL-17A and Autoantibodies. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2016; 193: 975-987.
  110. Bosken CH, Hards J, Gatter K, Hogg JC. Characterization of the inflammatory reaction in the peripheral airways of cigarette smokers using immunocytochemistry. *Am Rev Respir Dis* 1992; 145: 911-917.
  111. Dekhuijzen PN, Aben KK, Dekker I, Aarts LP, Wienders PL, van Herwaarden CL, Bast A. Increased exhalation of hydrogen peroxide in patients with stable and unstable chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 1996; 154: 813-816.
  112. Taggart C, Cervantes-Laurean D, Kim G, McElvaney NG, Wehr N, Moss J, Levine RL. Oxidation of either methionine 351 or methionine 358 in alpha 1-antitrypsin causes loss of anti-neutrophil elastase activity. *J Biol Chem* 2000; 275: 27258-27265.
  113. Gilmour PS, Rahman I, Donaldson K, MacNee W. Histone acetylation regulates epithelial IL-8 release mediated by oxidative stress from environmental particles. *Am J Physiol Lung Cell Mol Physiol* 2003; 284: L533-540.
  114. Di Stefano A, Caramori G, Oates T, Capelli A, Lusuadi M, Gnemmi I, Ioli F, Chung KF, Donner CF, Barnes PJ, Adcock IM. Increased expression of nuclear factor-kappaB in bronchial biopsies from smokers and patients with COPD. *Eur Respir J* 2002; 20: 556-563.
  115. Rovina N, Koutsoukou A, Koulouris NG. Inflammation and immune response in COPD: where do we stand? *Mediators Inflamm* 2013; 2013: 413735.
  116. De Nardo D, De Nardo CM, Latz E. New insights into mechanisms controlling the NLRP3 inflammasome and its role in lung disease. *Am J Pathol* 2014; 184: 42-54.
  117. Sze MA, Dimitriu PA, Suzuki M, McDonough JE, Campbell JD, Brothers JF, Erb-Downward JR, Huffnagle GB, Hayashi S, Elliott WM, Cooper J, Sin DD, Lenburg ME, Spira A, Mohn WW, Hogg JC. Host Response to the Lung Microbiome in Chronic Obstructive Pulmonary Disease. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2015; 192: 438-445.
  118. Crisan TO, Netea MG, Joosten LA. Innate immune memory: Implications for host responses to damage-associated molecular patterns. *Eur J Immunol* 2016; 46: 817-828.
  119. Netea MG, Latz E, Mills KH, O'Neill LA. Innate immune memory: a paradigm shift in understanding host defense. *Nat Immunol* 2015; 16: 675-679.
  120. Babu KS, Morjaria JB. Emerging therapeutic strategies in COPD. *Drug Discov Today* 2015; 20: 371-379.
  121. Brusselle G, Bracke K. Targeting immune pathways for therapy in asthma and chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *Ann Am Thorac Soc* 2014; 11 Suppl 5: S322-328.
  122. Mushtaq Y. The COPD pipeline. *Nat Rev Drug Discov* 2014; 13: 253.
  123. Button B, Anderson WH, Boucher RC. Mucus Hyperconcentration as a Unifying Aspect of the Chronic Bronchitic Phenotype. *Ann Am Thorac Soc* 2016; 13 Suppl 2: S156-162.
  124. Ghosh A, Boucher RC, Tarran R. Airway hydration and COPD. *Cell Mol Life Sci* 2015; 72: 3637-3652.
  125. Randell SH, Boucher RC. Effective mucus clearance is essential for respiratory health. *Am J Respir Cell Mol Biol* 2006; 35: 20.
  126. Knowles MR, Boucher RC. Mucus clearance as a primary innate defense mechanism for mammalian airways. *J Clin Invest* 2002; 109: 571-578.

127. Crystal RG, Randell SH, Engelhardt JF, Voynow J, Sunday ME. Airway epithelial cells: current concepts and challenges. *Proc Am Thorac Soc* 2008; 5: 772-777.
128. Satir P, Christensen ST. Overview of structure and function of mammalian cilia. *Annu Rev Physiol* 2007; 69: 377-400.
129. Salathe M. Regulation of mammalian ciliary beating. *Annu Rev Physiol* 2007; 69: 401-422.
130. Thornton DJ, Rousseau K, McGuckin MA. Structure and function of the polymeric mucins in airways mucus. *Annu Rev Physiol* 2008; 70: 459-486.
131. Curran DR, Cohn L. Advances in mucous cell metaplasia: a plug for mucus as a therapeutic focus in chronic airway disease. *Am J Respir Cell Mol Biol* 2010; 42: 268.
132. Voynow JA, Rubin BK. Mucins, mucus, and sputum. *Chest* 2009; 135: 505-512.
133. Radicioni G, Cao R, Carpenter J, Ford AA, Wang TT, Li Y, Kesimer M. The innate immune properties of airway mucosal surfaces are regulated by dynamic interactions between mucins and interacting proteins: the mucin interactome. *Mucosal Immunol* 2016.
134. Dickey BF. Walking on Solid Ground. *Science* 2012; 337: 924-925.
135. Kesimer M, Ehre C, Burns KA, Davis CW, Sheehan JK, Pickles RJ. Molecular organization of the mucins and glycocalyx underlying mucus transport over mucosal surfaces of the airways. *Mucosal Immunol* 2013; 6: 379-392.
136. Hattrup CL, Gendler SJ. Structure and function of the cell surface (tethered) mucins. *Annu Rev Physiol* 2008; 70: 431-457.
137. Stonebraker JR, Wagner D, Lefenstey RW, Burns K, Gendler SJ, Bergelson JM, Boucher RC, O'Neal WK, Pickles RJ. Glycocalyx restricts adenoviral vector access to apical receptors expressed on respiratory epithelium in vitro and in vivo: role for tethered mucins as barriers to luminal infection. *Journal of virology* 2004; 78: 13755-13768.
138. Button B, Cai LH, Ehre C, Kesimer M, Hill DB, Sheehan JK, Boucher RC, Rubinstein M. A periciliary brush promotes the lung health by separating the mucus layer from airway epithelia. *Science* 2012; 337: 937-941.
139. Shah VS, Meyerholz DK, Tang XX, Reznikov L, Abou Alaiwa M, Ernst SE, Karp PH, Wohlford-Lenane CL, Heilmann KP, Leidinger MR, Allen PD, Zabner J, McCray PB, Jr., Ostedgaard LS, Stoltz DA, Randak CO, Welsh MJ. Airway acidification initiates host defense abnormalities in cystic fibrosis mice. *Science* 2016; 351: 503-507.
140. Garcia-Caballero A, Rasmussen JE, Gaillard E, Watson MJ, Olsen JC, Donaldson SH, Stutts MJ, Tarran R. SPLUNC1 regulates airway surface liquid volume by protecting ENaC from proteolytic cleavage. *Proc Natl Acad Sci U S A* 2009; 106: 11412-11417.
141. Hobbs CA, Blanchard MG, Kellenberger S, Bencharit S, Cao R, Kesimer M, Walton WG, Redinbo MR, Stutts MJ, Tarran R. Identification of SPLUNC1's ENaC-inhibitory domain yields novel strategies to treat sodium hyperabsorption in cystic fibrosis airways. *FASEB J* 2012; 26: 4348-4359.
142. Button B, Okada SF, Frederick CB, Thelin WR, Boucher RC. Mechanosensitive ATP Release Maintains Proper Mucus Hydration of Airways. *Science Signaling* 2013; 6: ra46-ra46.
143. Hobbs CA, Da Tan C, Tarran R. Does epithelial sodium channel hyperactivity contribute to cystic fibrosis lung disease? *The Journal of physiology* 2013; 591: 4377-4387.
144. Lam HC, Cloonan SM, Bhashyam AR, Haspel JA, Singh A, Sathirapongsasuti JF, Cervo M, Yao H, Chung AL, Mizumura K, An CH, Shan B, Franks JM, Haley KJ, Owen CA, Tesfaigzi Y, Washko GR, Quackenbush J, Silverman EK, Rahman I, Kim HP, Mahmood A, Biswal SS, Ryter SW, Choi AM. Histone deacetylase 6-mediated selective autophagy regulates COPD-associated cilia dysfunction. *J Clin Invest* 2013; 123: 5212-5230.
145. Simet SM, Sisson JH, Pavlik JA, Devasure JM, Boyer C, Liu X, Kawasaki S, Sharp JG, Rennard SI, Wyatt TA. Long-term cigarette smoke exposure in a mouse model of ciliated epithelial cell function. *Am J Respir Cell Mol Biol* 2010; 43: 635-640.



146. Mall MA. Role of cilia, mucus, and airway surface liquid in mucociliary dysfunction: lessons from mouse models. *J Aerosol Med Pulm Drug Deliv* 2008; 21: 13-24.
147. Kim V, Criner GJ. Chronic bronchitis and chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2013; 187: 228-237.
148. Innes AL, Woodruff PG, Ferrando RE, Donnelly S, Dolganov GM, Lazarus SC, Fahy JV. Epithelial mucin stores are increased in the large airways of smokers with airflow obstruction. *Chest* 2006; 130: 1102-1108.
149. Tyner JW, Kim EY, Ide K, Pelletier MR, Roswit WT, Morton JD, Battaile JT, Patel AC, Patterson GA, Castro M, Spoor MS, You Y, Brody SL, Holtzman MJ. Blocking airway mucous cell metaplasia by inhibiting EGFR antiapoptosis and IL-13 transdifferentiation signals. *J Clin Invest* 2006; 116: 309-321.
150. de Boer WI, Hau CM, van Schadewijk A, Stolk J, van Krieken JH, Hiemstra PS. Expression of epidermal growth factors and their receptors in the bronchial epithelium of subjects with chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *Am J Clin Pathol* 2006; 125: 184-192.
151. O'Donnell RA, Richter A, Ward J, Angco G, Mehta A, Rousseau K, Swallow DM, Holgate ST, Djukanovic R, Davies DE, Wilson SJ. Expression of ErbB receptors and mucins in the airways of long term current smokers. *Thorax* 2004; 59: 1032-1040.
152. Takeyama K, Jung B, Shim JJ, Burgel PR, Dao-Pick T, Ueki IF, Protin U, Kroschel P, Nadel JA. Activation of epidermal growth factor receptors is responsible for mucin synthesis induced by cigarette smoke. *Am J Physiol Lung Cell Mol Physiol* 2001; 280: L165-172.
153. Rose MC, Voynow JA. Respiratory tract mucin genes and mucin glycoproteins in health and disease. *Physiol Rev* 2006; 86: 245-278.
154. Thornton DJ, Sheehan JK. From mucins to mucus: toward a more coherent understanding of this essential barrier. *Proc Am Thorac Soc* 2004; 1: 54-61.
155. Davis CW, Dickey BF. Regulated airway goblet cell mucin secretion. *Annu Rev Physiol* 2008; 70: 487-512.
156. Roy MG, Livraghi-Butrico A, Fletcher AA, McElwee MM, Evans SE, Boerner RM, Alexander SN, Bellinghausen LK, Song AS, Petrova YM, Tuvim MJ, Adachi R, Romo I, Bordt AS, Bowden MG, Sisson JH, Woodruff PG, Thornton DJ, Rousseau K, De la Garza MM, Moghaddam SJ, Karmouty-Quintana H, Blackburn MR, Drouin SM, Davis CW, et al. Muc5b is required for airway defence. *Nature* 2014; 505: 412-416.
157. Clunes LA, Davies CM, Coakley RD, Aleksandrov AA, Henderson AG, Zeman KL, Worthington EN, Gentzsch M, Kreda SM, Cholon D. Cigarette smoke exposure induces CFTR internalization and insolubility, leading to airway surface liquid dehydration. *FASEB J* 2012; 26: 533-545.
158. Anderson WH, Coakley RD, Button B, Henderson AG, Zeman KL, Alexis NE, Peden DB, Lazarowski ER, Davis CW, Bailey S, Fuller F, Almond M, Qaqish B, Bordonali E, Rubinstein M, Bennett WD, Kesimer M, Boucher RC. The Relationship of Mucus Concentration (Hydration) to Mucus Osmotic Pressure and Transport in Chronic Bronchitis. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2015; 192: 182-190.
159. Mall MA. Unplugging Mucus in Cystic Fibrosis and Chronic Obstructive Pulmonary Disease. *Ann Am Thorac Soc* 2016; 13 Suppl 2: S177-185.
160. Mall MA, Hartl D. CFTR: cystic fibrosis and beyond. *Eur Respir J* 2014.
161. Cantin AM, Hanrahan JW, Bilodeau G, Ellis L, Dupuis A, Liao J, Zielenski J, Durie P. Cystic fibrosis transmembrane conductance regulator function is suppressed in cigarette smokers. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2006; 173: 1139-1144.
162. Dransfield MT, Wilhelm AM, Flanagan B, Courville C, Tidwell SL, Raju SV, Gaggar A, Steele C, Tang LP, Liu B, Rowe SM. Acquired CFTR Dysfunction in the Lower Airways in COPD. *Chest* 2013.
163. Raju SV, Jackson PL, Courville CA, McNicholas CM, Sloane PA, Sabbatini G, Tidwell S, Tang LP, Liu B, Fortenberry JA, Jones CW, Boydston JA, Clancy JP, Bowen LE, Accurso FJ, Blalock JE, Dransfield MT,



- Rowe SM. Cigarette Smoke Induces Systemic Defects in Cystic Fibrosis Transmembrane Conductance Regulator Function. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2013; 188: 1321-1330.
164. Hassan F, Xu X, Nuovo G, Killilea DW, Tyrrell J, Da Tan C, Tarran R, Diaz P, Jee J, Knoell D, Boyaka PN, Cormet-Boyaka E. Accumulation of metals in GOLD4 COPD lungs is associated with decreased CFTR levels. *Respir Res* 2014; 15: 69.
  165. Lambert JA, Raju SV, Tang LP, McNicholas CM, Li Y, Courville CA, Farris RF, Coricor GE, Smoot LH, Mazur MM, Dransfield MT, Bolger GB, Rowe SM. Cystic fibrosis transmembrane conductance regulator activation by roflumilast contributes to therapeutic benefit in chronic bronchitis. *Am J Respir Cell Mol Biol* 2014; 50: 549-558.
  166. Sloane PA, Shastry S, Wilhelm A, Courville C, Tang LP, Backer K, Levin E, Raju SV, Li Y, Mazur M, Byan-Parker S, Grizzle W, Sorscher EJ, Dransfield MT, Rowe SM. A pharmacologic approach to acquired cystic fibrosis transmembrane conductance regulator dysfunction in smoking related lung disease. *PloS one* 2012; 7: e39809.
  167. Downs CA, Kreiner LH, Trac DQ, Helms MN. Acute effects of cigarette smoke extract on alveolar epithelial sodium channel activity and lung fluid clearance. *Am J Respir Cell Mol Biol* 2013; 49: 251-259.
  168. Downs CA, Kumar A, Kreiner LH, Johnson NM, Helms MN. H<sub>2</sub>O<sub>2</sub> regulates lung epithelial sodium channel (ENaC) via ubiquitin-like protein Nedd8. *J Biol Chem* 2013; 288: 8136-8145.
  169. Gille T, Randrianarison-Pellan N, Goolaerts A, Dard N, Uzunhan Y, Ferrary E, Hummler E, Clerici C, Planes C. Hypoxia-induced inhibition of epithelial Na<sup>(+)</sup> channels in the lung. Role of Nedd4-2 and the ubiquitin-proteasome pathway. *Am J Respir Cell Mol Biol* 2014; 50: 526-537.
  170. Zhao R, Liang X, Zhao M, Liu SL, Huang Y, Idell S, Li X, Ji HL. Correlation of apical fluid-regulating channel proteins with lung function in human COPD lungs. *PloS one* 2014; 9: e109725.
  171. Astrand AB, Hemmerling M, Root J, Wingren C, Pesic J, Johansson E, Garland AL, Ghosh A, Tarran R. Linking increased airway hydration, ciliary beating, and mucociliary clearance through ENaC inhibition. *Am J Physiol Lung Cell Mol Physiol* 2015; 308: L22-32.
  172. Reihill JA, Walker B, Hamilton RA, Ferguson TE, Elborn JS, Stutts MJ, Harvey BJ, Saint-Criq V, Hendrick SM, Martin SL. Inhibition of Protease-ENaC Signaling Improves Mucociliary Function in Cystic Fibrosis Airways. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2016.
  173. Wright JL, Cosio M, Churg A. Animal models of chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *Am J Physiol Lung Cell Mol Physiol* 2008; 295: L1-15.
  174. Clarke LL, Grubb BR, Yankaskas JR, Cotton CU, McKenzie A, Boucher RC. Relationship of a non-cystic fibrosis transmembrane conductance regulator-mediated chloride conductance to organ-level disease in Cftr(-/-) mice. *Proc Natl Acad Sci U S A* 1994; 91: 479-483.
  175. Grubb BR, Boucher RC. Pathophysiology of gene-targeted mouse models for cystic fibrosis. *Physiol Rev* 1999; 79: S193-214.
  176. Mall M, Grubb BR, Harkema JR, O'Neal WK, Boucher RC. Increased airway epithelial Na<sup>+</sup> absorption produces cystic fibrosis-like lung disease in mice. *Nat Med* 2004; 10: 487-493.
  177. Mall MA, Harkema JR, Trojanek JB, Treis D, Livraghi A, Schubert S, Zhou Z, Kreda SM, Tilley SL, Hudson EJ, O'Neal WK, Boucher RC. Development of chronic bronchitis and emphysema in beta-epithelial Na<sup>+</sup> channel-overexpressing mice. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2008; 177: 730-742.
  178. Johannesson B, Hirtz S, Schatterny J, Schultz C, Mall MA. CFTR regulates early pathogenesis of chronic obstructive lung disease in betaENaC-overexpressing mice. *PloS one* 2012; 7: e44059.
  179. Burgel PR. Chronic cough and sputum production: a clinical COPD phenotype? *Eur Respir J* 2012; 40: 4-6.
  180. Dijkstra AE, de Jong K, Boezen HM, Kromhout H, Vermeulen R, Groen HJ, Postma DS, Vonk JM. Risk factors for chronic mucus hypersecretion in individuals with and without COPD: influence of smoking and job exposure on CMH. *Occup Environ Med* 2014; 71: 346-352.

181. Marchetti N, Garshick E, Kinney GL, McKenzie A, Stinson D, Lutz SM, Lynch DA, Criner GJ, Silverman EK, Crapo JD. Association between occupational exposure and lung function, respiratory symptoms, and high-resolution computed tomography imaging in COPDGene. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2014; 190: 756-762.
182. Kim V, Criner GJ. The chronic bronchitis phenotype in chronic obstructive pulmonary disease: features and implications. *Curr Opin Pulm Med* 2015; 21: 133-141.
183. Montes de Oca M, Halbert RJ, Lopez MV, Perez-Padilla R, Talamo C, Moreno D, Muino A, Jardim JR, Valdivia G, Pertuze J, Menezes AM. The chronic bronchitis phenotype in subjects with and without COPD: the PLATINO study. *Eur Respir J* 2012; 40: 28-36.
184. Kim V, Davey A, Comellas AP, Han MK, Washko G, Martinez CH, Lynch D, Lee JH, Silverman EK, Crapo JD, Make BJ, Criner GJ. Clinical and computed tomographic predictors of chronic bronchitis in COPD: a cross sectional analysis of the COPDGene study. *Respir Res* 2014; 15: 52.
185. Kim V, Han MLK, Vance GB, Make BJ, Newell JD, Hokanson JE, Hersh CP, Stinson D, Silverman EK, Criner GJ. The Chronic Bronchitic Phenotype of COPD: An Analysis of the COPDGene Study. *Chest* 2011; 140: 626-633.
186. Lu M, Yao W, Zhong N, Zhou Y, Wang C, Chen P, Kang J, Huang S, Chen B, Wang C, Ni D, Wang X, Wang D, Liu S, Lu J, Shen N, Ran P. Chronic obstructive pulmonary disease in the absence of chronic bronchitis in China. *Respirology (Carlton, Vic)* 2010; 15: 1072-1078.
187. Vestbo J, Prescott E, Lange P. Association of chronic mucus hypersecretion with FEV1 decline and chronic obstructive pulmonary disease morbidity. Copenhagen City Heart Study Group. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 1996; 153: 1530-1535.
188. Mackay AJ, Hurst JR. COPD Exacerbations: Causes, Prevention, and Treatment. *The Medical clinics of North America* 2012; 96: 789.
189. Hurst JR, Vestbo J, Anzueto A, Locantore N, Mullerova H, Tal-Singer R, Miller B, Lomas DA, Agusti A, Macnee W, Calverley P, Rennard S, Wouters EF, Wedzicha JA. Susceptibility to exacerbation in chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *N Engl J Med* 2010; 363: 1128-1138.
190. Lindberg A, Sawalha S, Hedman L, Larsson LG, Lundback B, Ronmark E. Subjects with COPD and productive cough have an increased risk for exacerbations and death. *Respir Med* 2015; 109: 88-95.
191. Prescott E, Lange P, Vestbo J. Chronic mucus hypersecretion in COPD and death from pulmonary infection. *Eur Respir J* 1995; 8: 1333-1338.
192. Pelkonen M, Notkola IL, Nissinen A, Tukiainen H, Koskela H. Thirty-year cumulative incidence of chronic bronchitis and COPD in relation to 30-year pulmonary function and 40-year mortality: a follow-up in middle-aged rural men. *Chest* 2006; 130: 1129-1137.
193. Mannino DM, Buist AS, Petty TL, Enright PL, Redd SC. Lung function and mortality in the United States: data from the First National Health and Nutrition Examination Survey follow up study. *Thorax* 2003; 58: 388-393.
194. Decramer M, Janssens W. Mucoactive therapy in COPD. *Eur Respir Rev* 2010; 19: 134-140.
195. Vestbo J, Edwards LD, Scanlon PD, Yates JC, Agusti A, Bakke P, Calverley PM, Celli B, Coxson HO, Crim C, Lomas DA, MacNee W, Miller BE, Silverman EK, Tal-Singer R, Wouters E, Rennard SI. Changes in forced expiratory volume in 1 second over time in COPD. *N Engl J Med* 2011; 365: 1184-1192.
196. Izquierdo-Alonso JL, Rodriguez-Gonzalez-moro JM, de Lucas-Ramos P, Unzueta I, Ribera X, Anton E, Martin A. Prevalence and characteristics of three clinical phenotypes of chronic obstructive pulmonary disease (COPD). *Respir Med* 2013; 107: 724-731.
197. Polverino F, Seys LJ, Bracke KR, Owen CA. B Cells in Chronic Obstructive Pulmonary Disease: Moving to Center Stage. *Am J Physiol Lung Cell Mol Physiol* 2016; 311: L687-L695.
198. Nagasawa T. Microenvironmental niches in the bone marrow required for B-cell development. *Nat Rev Immunol* 2006; 6: 107-116.

199. Pillai S, Cariappa A. The follicular versus marginal zone B lymphocyte cell fate decision. *Nat Rev Immunol* 2009; 9: 767-777.
200. Kato A, Hulse KE, Tan BK, Schleimer RP. B-lymphocyte lineage cells and the respiratory system. *JACI* 2013; 131: 933-957.
201. Yuseff M-I, Pierobon P, Reversat A, Lennon-Dumenil A-M. How B cells capture, process and present antigens: a crucial role for cell polarity. *Nat Rev Immunol* 2013; 13: 475-486.
202. Bajenoff M. Stromal cells control soluble material and cellular transport in lymph nodes. *Front Immunol* 2012; 3: 304.
203. Cohen-Kaminsky S, Ranchoux B, Perros F. CXCL13 in Tertiary Lymphoid Tissues: Sites of Production Are Different from Sites of Functional Localization. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2014; 189: 369-370.
204. LeBien TW, Tedder TF. B lymphocytes: how they develop and function. *Blood* 2008; 112: 1570-1580.
205. Heesters BA, Myers RC, Carroll MC. Follicular dendritic cells: dynamic antigen libraries. *Nat Rev Immunol* 2014; 14: 495-504.
206. Brusselle GG, Demoor T, Bracke KR, Brandsma CA, Timens W. Lymphoid follicles in (very) severe COPD: beneficial or harmful? *Eur Respir J* 2009; 34: 219-230.
207. Holt PG, Strickland DH, Wikstrom ME, Jahnsen FL. Regulation of immunological homeostasis in the respiratory tract. *Nat Rev Immunol* 2008; 8: 142-152.
208. Pabst R, Tschernig T. Bronchus-associated lymphoid tissue: an entry site for antigens for successful mucosal vaccinations? *Am J Respir Cell Mol Biol* 2010; 43: 137-141.
209. Elliot JG, Jensen CM, Mutavdzic S, Lamb JP, Carroll NG, James AL. Aggregations of lymphoid cells in the airways of nonsmokers, smokers, and subjects with asthma. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2004; 169: 712-718.
210. Olloquequi J, Montes JF, Prats A, Rodriguez E, Montero MA, Garcia-Valero J, Ferrer J. Significant increase of CD57+ cells in pulmonary lymphoid follicles of COPD patients. *Eur Respir J* 2011; 37: 289-298.
211. Yadava K, Marsland BJ. Lymphoid follicles in chronic lung diseases. *Thorax* 2013; 68: 597-598.
212. Stranford S, Ruddle NH. Follicular dendritic cells, conduits, lymphatic vessels, and high endothelial venules in tertiary lymphoid organs: Parallels with lymph node stroma. *Front Immunol* 2012; 3: 350.
213. Cupedo T, Jansen W, Kraal G, Mebius RE. Induction of secondary and tertiary lymphoid structures in the skin. *Immunity* 2004; 21: 655-667.
214. Mebius RE. Organogenesis of lymphoid tissues. *Nat Rev Immunol* 2003; 3: 292-303.
215. van de Pavert SA, Mebius RE. New insights into the development of lymphoid tissues. *Nat Rev Immunol* 2010; 10: 664-674.
216. Pitzalis C, Jones GW, Bombardieri M, Jones SA. Ectopic lymphoid-like structures in infection, cancer and autoimmunity. *Nat Rev Immunol* 2014; 14: 447-462.
217. Mackay F, Figgett WA, Saulep D, Lepage M, Hibbs ML. B-cell stage and context-dependent requirements for survival signals from BAFF and the B-cell receptor. *Immunol Rev* 2010; 237: 205-225.
218. Mackay F, Schneider P. Cracking the BAFF code. *Nat Rev Immunol* 2009; 9: 491-502.
219. Polverino F, Cosio BG, Pons J, Lauchó-Contreras M, Tejera P, Iglesias A, Rios A, Jahn A, Sauleda J, Divo M, Pinto-Plata V, Sholl L, Rosas IO, Agusti A, Celli BR, Owen CA. B-cell Activating Factor: An Orchestrator of Lymphoid Follicles in Severe COPD. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2015.
220. Bossen C, Tardivel A, Willen L, Fletcher CA, Perroud M, Beermann F, Rolink AG, Scott ML, Mackay F, Schneider P. Mutation of the BAFF furin cleavage site impairs B-cell homeostasis and antibody responses. *Eur J Immunol* 2011; 41: 787-797.
221. Gardam S, Brink R. Non-Canonical NF-kappaB Signaling Initiated by BAFF Influences B Cell Biology at Multiple Junctions. *Front Immunol* 2014; 4: 509.

222. Sasaki Y, Casola S, Kutok JL, Rajewsky K, Schmidt-Supprian M. TNF family member B cell-activating factor (BAFF) receptor-dependent and -independent roles for BAFF in B cell physiology. *J Immunol* 2004; 173: 2245-2252.
223. Bossen C, Schneider P. BAFF, APRIL and their receptors: structure, function and signaling. *Semin Immunol* 2006; 18: 263-275.
224. Vincent FB, Saulep-Easton D, Figgett WA, Fairfax KA, Mackay F. The BAFF/APRIL system: emerging functions beyond B cell biology and autoimmunity. *Cytokine Growth Factor Rev* 2013; 24: 203-215.
225. Gorelik L, Gilbride K, Dobles M, Kalled SL, Zandman D, Scott ML. Normal B cell homeostasis requires B cell activation factor production by radiation-resistant cells. *J Exp Med* 2003; 198: 937-945.
226. Naradikian MS, Perate AR, Cancro MP. BAFF receptors and ligands create independent homeostatic niches for B cell subsets. *Curr Opin Immunol* 2015; 34: 126-129.
227. Cremasco V, Woodruff MC, Onder L, Cupovic J, Nieves-Bonilla JM, Schildberg FA, Chang J, Cremasco F, Harvey CJ, Wucherpfennig K, Ludewig B, Carroll MC, Turley SJ. B cell homeostasis and follicle confines are governed by fibroblastic reticular cells. *Nat Immunol* 2014; 15: 973-981.
228. Goenka R, Matthews AH, Zhang B, O'Neill PJ, Scholz JL, Migone TS, Leonard WJ, Stohl W, Hershberg U, Cancro MP. Local BLyS production by T follicular cells mediates retention of high affinity B cells during affinity maturation. *J Exp Med* 2014; 211: 45-56.
229. Chen M, Lin X, Liu Y, Li Q, Deng Y, Liu Z, Brand D, Guo Z, He X, Ryffel B, Zheng SG. The function of BAFF on T helper cells in autoimmunity. *Cytokine Growth Factor Rev* 2013.
230. Sutherland AP, Ng LG, Fletcher CA, Shum B, Newton RA, Grey ST, Rolph MS, Mackay F, Mackay CR. BAFF augments certain Th1-associated inflammatory responses. *J Immunol* 2005; 174: 5537-5544.
231. Chang SK, Arendt BK, Darce JR, Wu X, Jelinek DF. A role for BLyS in the activation of innate immune cells. *Blood* 2006; 108: 2687-2694.
232. Chang SK, Mihalcik SA, Jelinek DF. B lymphocyte stimulator regulates adaptive immune responses by directly promoting dendritic cell maturation. *J Immunol* 2008; 180: 7394-7403.
233. Lahiri A, Pochard P, Le Pottier L, Tobon GJ, Bendaoud B, Youinou P, Pers JO. The complexity of the BAFF TNF-family members: implications for autoimmunity. *J Autoimmun* 2012; 39: 189-198.
234. Onodera T, Takahashi Y, Yokoi Y, Ato M, Kodama Y, Hachimura S, Kurosaki T, Kobayashi K. Memory B cells in the lung participate in protective humoral immune responses to pulmonary influenza virus reinfection. *Proc Natl Acad Sci U S A* 2012; 109: 2485-2490.
235. Vu Van D, Beier KC, Pietzke LJ, Al Baz MS, Feist RK, Gurka S, Hamelmann E, Kroczeck RA, Hutloff A. Local T/B cooperation in inflamed tissues is supported by T follicular helper-like cells. *Nat Commun* 2016; 7: 10875.
236. Joo HM, He Y, Sangster MY. Broad dispersion and lung localization of virus-specific memory B cells induced by influenza pneumonia. *Proc Natl Acad Sci U S A* 2008; 105: 3485-3490.
237. Adachi Y, Onodera T, Yamada Y, Daio R, Tsuiji M, Inoue T, Kobayashi K, Kurosaki T, Ato M, Takahashi Y. Distinct germinal center selection at local sites shapes memory B cell response to viral escape. *J Exp Med* 2015; 212: 1709-1723.
238. Cyster JG. Getting close to the action elicits better memories. *J Exp Med* 2015; 212: 1484.
239. Brandsma CA, Kerstjens HA, van Geffen WH, Geerlings M, Postma DS, Hylkema MN, Timens W. Differential switching to IgG and IgA in active smoking COPD patients and healthy controls. *Eur Respir J* 2012; 40: 313-321.
240. Gosman MM, Willemse BW, Jansen DF, Lapperre TS, van Schadewijk A, Hiemstra PS, Postma DS, Timens W, Kerstjens HA. Increased number of B-cells in bronchial biopsies in COPD. *Eur Respir J* 2006; 27: 60-64.
241. Zhu J, Qiu Y, Valobra M, Qiu S, Majumdar S, Matin D, De Rose V, Jeffery PK. Plasma cells and IL-4 in chronic bronchitis and chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2007; 175: 1125-1133.

242. van der Strate BW, Postma DS, Brandsma CA, Melgert BN, Luinge MA, Geerlings M, Hylkema MN, van den Berg A, Timens W, Kerstjens HA. Cigarette smoke-induced emphysema: A role for the B cell? *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2006; 173: 751-758.
243. Mori M, Andersson CK, Svedberg KA, Glader P, Bergqvist A, Shikhagaie M, Lofdahl CG, Erjefalt JS. Appearance of remodelled and dendritic cell-rich alveolar-lymphoid interfaces provides a structural basis for increased alveolar antigen uptake in chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *Thorax* 2013; 68: 521-531.
244. Kelsen SG, Aksoy MO, Georgy M, Hershman R, Ji R, Li X, Hurford M, Solomides C, Chatila W, Kim V. Lymphoid follicle cells in chronic obstructive pulmonary disease overexpress the chemokine receptor CXCR3. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2009; 179: 799-805.
245. Plumb J, Smyth LJ, Adams HR, Vestbo J, Bentley A, Singh SD. Increased T-regulatory cells within lymphocyte follicles in moderate COPD. *Eur Respir J* 2009; 34: 89-94.
246. Bracke KR, Verhamme FM, Seys LJ, Bantsimba-Malanda C, Cunoosamy DM, Herbst R, Hammad H, Lambrecht BN, Joos GF, Brusselle GG. Role of CXCL13 in cigarette smoke-induced lymphoid follicle formation and chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2013; 188: 343-355.
247. Lim HW, Hillsamer P, Banham AH, Kim CH. Cutting edge: direct suppression of B cells by CD4<sup>+</sup> CD25<sup>+</sup> regulatory T cells. *J Immunol* 2005; 175: 4180-4183.
248. Mori M, Andersson CK, Graham GJ, Lofdahl CG, Erjefalt JS. Increased number and altered phenotype of lymphatic vessels in peripheral lung compartments of patients with COPD. *Respir Res* 2013; 14: 65.
249. Baraldo S, Turato G, Lunardi F, Bazzan E, Schiavon M, Ferrarotti I, Molena B, Cazzuffi R, Damin M, Balestro E, Luisetti M, Rea F, Calabrese F, Cosio MG, Saetta M. Immune activation in alpha1-antitrypsin-deficiency emphysema. Beyond the protease-antiprotease paradigm. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2015; 191: 402-409.
250. Faner R, Cruz T, Casserras T, Lopez-Giraldo A, Noell G, Coca I, Tal-Singer R, Miller B, Rodriguez-Roisin R, Spira A, Kalko SG, Agusti A. Network Analysis of Lung Transcriptomics Reveals a Distinct B Cell Signature in Emphysema. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2016.
251. Brusselle GG, Bracke KR, Maes T, D'Hulst AI, Moerloose KB, Joos GF, Pauwels RA. Murine models of COPD. *Pulm Pharmacol Ther* 2006; 19: 155-165.
252. Churg A, Cosio M, Wright JL. Mechanisms of cigarette smoke-induced COPD: insights from animal models. *Am J Physiol Lung Cell Mol Physiol* 2008; 294: L612-631.
253. Demoor T, Bracke KR, Maes T, Vandooren B, Elewaut D, Pilette C, Joos GF, Brusselle GG. Role of lymphotoxin-alpha in cigarette smoke-induced inflammation and lymphoid neogenesis. *Eur Respir J* 2009; 34: 405-416.
254. Buckley CD, Barone F, Nayar S, Benezech C, Caamano J. Stromal cells in chronic inflammation and tertiary lymphoid organ formation. *Annu Rev Immunol* 2015; 33: 715-745.
255. Carragher DM, Rangel-Moreno J, Randall TD. Ectopic lymphoid tissues and local immunity. *Semin Immunol* 2008; 20: 26-42.
256. Bracke KR, D'Hulst AI, Maes T, Demedts IK, Moerloose KB, Kuziel WA, Joos GF, Brusselle GG. Cigarette smoke-induced pulmonary inflammation, but not airway remodelling, is attenuated in chemokine receptor 5-deficient mice. *Clin Exp Allergy* 2007; 37: 1467-1479.
257. Bracke KR, D'Hulst AI, Maes T, Moerloose KB, Demedts IK, Lebecque S, Joos GF, Brusselle GG. Cigarette smoke-induced pulmonary inflammation and emphysema are attenuated in CCR6-deficient mice. *J Immunol* 2006; 177: 4350-4359.
258. Demoor T, Bracke KR, Vermaelen KY, Dupont L, Joos GF, Brusselle GG. CCR7 modulates pulmonary and lymph node inflammatory responses in cigarette smoke-exposed mice. *J Immunol* 2009; 183: 8186-8194.

259. Rangel-Moreno J, Carragher DM, de la Luz Garcia-Hernandez M, Hwang JY, Kusser K, Hartson L, Kolls JK, Khader SA, Randall TD. The development of inducible bronchus-associated lymphoid tissue depends on IL-17. *Nat Immunol* 2011; 12: 639-646.
260. Fleige H, Ravens S, Moschovakis GL, Bolter J, Willenzon S, Sutter G, Haussler S, Kalinke U, Prinz I, Forster R. IL-17-induced CXCL12 recruits B cells and induces follicle formation in BALT in the absence of differentiated FDCs. *J Exp Med* 2014; 211: 643-651.
261. Halle S, Dujardin HC, Bakocevic N, Fleige H, Danzer H, Willenzon S, Suezer Y, Hammerling G, Garbi N, Sutter G, Worbs T, Forster R. Induced bronchus-associated lymphoid tissue serves as a general priming site for T cells and is maintained by dendritic cells. *J Exp Med* 2009; 206: 2593-2601.
262. GeurtsvanKessel CH, Willart MA, Bergen IM, van Rijt LS, Muskens F, Elewaut D, Osterhaus AD, Hendriks R, Rimmelzwaan GF, Lambrecht BN. Dendritic cells are crucial for maintenance of tertiary lymphoid structures in the lung of influenza virus-infected mice. *J Exp Med* 2009; 206: 2339-2349.
263. Polverino F, Baraldo S, Bazzan E, Agostini S, Turato G, Lunardi F, Balestro E, Damin M, Papi A, Maestrelli P, Calabrese F, Saetta M. A novel insight into adaptive immunity in chronic obstructive pulmonary disease: B cell activating factor belonging to the tumor necrosis factor family. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2010; 182: 1011-1019.
264. Ladjemi MZ, Lecocq M, Weynand B, Bowen H, Gould HJ, Van Snick J, Detry B, Pilette C. Increased IgA production by B-cells in COPD via lung epithelial interleukin-6 and TACI pathways. *Eur Respir J* 2015; 45: 980-993.
265. Brandtzaeg P. Secretory IgA: Designed for Anti-Microbial Defense. *Front Immunol* 2013; 4: 222.
266. Moyron-Quiroz JE, Rangel-Moreno J, Kusser K, Hartson L, Sprague F, Goodrich S, Woodland DL, Lund FE, Randall TD. Role of inducible bronchus associated lymphoid tissue (iBALT) in respiratory immunity. *Nat Med* 2004; 10: 927-934.
267. Moyron-Quiroz JE, Rangel-Moreno J, Hartson L, Kusser K, Tighe MP, Klonowski KD, Lefrancois L, Cauley LS, Harmsen AG, Lund FE, Randall TD. Persistence and responsiveness of immunologic memory in the absence of secondary lymphoid organs. *Immunity* 2006; 25: 643-654.
268. Gohy ST, Detry BR, Lecocq M, Bouzin C, Weynand BA, Amatngalim GD, Sibille YM, Pilette C. Polymeric immunoglobulin receptor down-regulation in chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. Persistence in the cultured epithelium and role of transforming growth factor-beta. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2014; 190: 509-521.
269. Polosukhin VV, Cates JM, Lawson WE, Zaynagetdinov R, Milstone AP, Massion PP, Ocak S, Ware LB, Lee JW, Bowler RP, Kononov AV, Randell SH, Blackwell TS. Bronchial secretory immunoglobulin a deficiency correlates with airway inflammation and progression of chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2011; 184: 317-327.
270. Lee SH, Goswami S, Grudo A, Song LZ, Bandi V, Goodnight-White S, Green L, Hacken-Bitar J, Huh J, Bakaeen F, Coxson HO, Cogswell S, Storness-Bliss C, Corry DB, Kheradmand F. Antielastin autoimmunity in tobacco smoking-induced emphysema. *Nat Med* 2007; 13: 567-569.
271. Feghali-Bostwick CA, Gadgil AS, Otterbein LE, Pilewski JM, Stoner MW, Csizmadia E, Zhang Y, Sciurba FC, Duncan SR. Autoantibodies in patients with chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2008; 177: 156-163.
272. Karayama M, Inui N, Suda T, Nakamura Y, Nakamura H, Chida K. Antiendothelial Cell Antibodies in Patients With COPD. *Chest* 2010; 138: 1303-1308.
273. Gray D, Gray M, Barr T. Innate responses of B cells. *Eur J Immunol* 2007; 37: 3304-3310.
274. Lund FE, Randall TD. Effector and regulatory B cells: modulators of CD4+ T cell immunity. *Nat Rev Immunol* 2010; 10: 236-247.
275. Harris DP, Haynes L, Sayles PC, Duso DK, Eaton SM, Lepak NM, Johnson LL, Swain SL, Lund FE. Reciprocal regulation of polarized cytokine production by effector B and T cells. *Nat Immunol* 2000; 1: 475-482.



276. John-Schuster G, Hager K, Conlon TM, Irmeler M, Beckers J, Eickelberg O, Yildirim AO. Cigarette smoke-induced iBALT mediates macrophage activation in a B cell-dependent manner in COPD. *Am J Physiol Lung Cell Mol Physiol* 2014; 307: L692-706.
277. Wong SC, Puaux AL, Chittezhath M, Shalova I, Kajiji TS, Wang X, Abastado JP, Lam KP, Biswas SK. Macrophage polarization to a unique phenotype driven by B cells. *Eur J Immunol* 2010; 40: 2296-2307.
278. D'Hulst A I, Vermaelen KY, Brusselle GG, Joos GF, Pauwels RA. Time course of cigarette smoke-induced pulmonary inflammation in mice. *Eur Respir J* 2005; 26: 204-213.
279. D'Hulst A I, Maes T, Bracke KR, Demedts IK, Tournoy KG, Joos GF, Brusselle GG. Cigarette smoke-induced pulmonary emphysema in scid-mice. Is the acquired immune system required? *Respir Res* 2005; 6: 147.
280. Thurlbeck WM. Measurement of pulmonary emphysema. *Am Rev Respir Dis* 1967; 95: 752-764.
281. Saetta M, Shiner RJ, Angus GE, Kim WD, Wang NS, King M, Ghezzi H, Cosio MG. Destructive index: a measurement of lung parenchymal destruction in smokers. *Am Rev Respir Dis* 1985; 131: 764-769.
282. Palmans E, Kips JC, Pauwels RA. Prolonged allergen exposure induces structural airway changes in sensitized rats. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2000; 161: 627-635.
283. Hofman A, Brusselle GG, Darwish Murad S, van Duijn CM, Franco OH, Goedegebure A, Ikram MA, Klaver CC, Nijsten TE, Peeters RP, Stricker BH, Tiemeier HW, Uitterlinden AG, Vernooij MW. The Rotterdam Study: 2016 objectives and design update. *Eur J Epidemiol* 2015; 30: 661-708.
284. Seys LJ, Verhamme FM, Dupont LL, Desauter E, Duerr J, Seyhan Agircan A, Conickx G, Joos GF, Brusselle GG, Mall MA, Bracke KR. Airway Surface Dehydration Aggravates Cigarette Smoke-Induced Hallmarks of COPD in Mice. *PLoS one* 2015; 10: e0129897.
285. Henderson AG, Ehre C, Button B, Abdullah LH, Cai LH, Leigh MW, DeMaria GC, Matsui H, Donaldson SH, Davis CW, Sheehan JK, Boucher RC, Kesimer M. Cystic fibrosis airway secretions exhibit mucin hyperconcentration and increased osmotic pressure. *J Clin Invest* 2014; 124: 3047-3060.
286. Global initiative for chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. Global strategy for the diagnosis, management, and prevention of chronic obstructive pulmonary disease [updated 2013]. .
287. H.-L. Ji XL, S. Idell, R. Zhao. Association of apical salt transporters with lung functions of human COPD. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2014; 189: A3020.
288. Evans CM, Koo JS. Airway mucus: the good, the bad, the sticky. *Pharmacol Ther* 2009; 121: 332-348.
289. Rose MC, Voynow JA. Respiratory tract mucin genes and mucin glycoproteins in health and disease. *Physiol Rev* 2006; 86: 245-278.
290. Mall MA, Button B, Johannesson B, Zhou Z, Livraghi A, Caldwell RA, Schubert SC, Schultz C, O'Neal WK, Pradervand S, Hummler E, Rossier BC, Grubb BR, Boucher RC. Airway surface liquid volume regulation determines different airway phenotypes in liddle compared with betaENaC-overexpressing mice. *J Biol Chem* 2010; 285: 26945-26955.
291. Krueger B, Haerteis S, Yang L, Hartner A, Rauh R, Korbacher C, Diakov A. Cholesterol depletion of the plasma membrane prevents activation of the epithelial sodium channel (ENaC) by SGK1. *Cell Physiol Biochem* 2009; 24: 605-618.
292. Vermaelen KY, Carro-Muino I, Lambrecht BN, Pauwels RA. Specific migratory dendritic cells rapidly transport antigen from the airways to the thoracic lymph nodes. *J Exp Med* 2001; 193: 51-60.
293. Vermaelen K, Pauwels R. Accurate and simple discrimination of mouse pulmonary dendritic cell and macrophage populations by flow cytometry: methodology and new insights. *Cytometry A* 2004; 61: 170-177.
294. Lanckacker EA, Tournoy KG, Hammad H, Holtappels G, Lambrecht BN, Joos GF, Maes T. Short cigarette smoke exposure facilitates sensitisation and asthma development in mice. *Eur Respir J* 2013; 41: 1189-1199.

295. Rab A, Rowe SM, Raju SV, Bebok Z, Matalon S, Collawn JF. Cigarette smoke and CFTR: implications in the pathogenesis of COPD. *Am J Physiol Lung Cell Mol Physiol* 2013; 305: L530-541.
296. Grubb BR, Paradiso AM, Boucher RC. Anomalies in ion transport in CF mouse tracheal epithelium. *Am J Physiol* 1994; 267: C293-300.
297. Xavier RF, Ramos D, Ito JT, Rodrigues FM, Bertolini GN, Macchione M, de Toledo AC, Ramos EM. Effects of cigarette smoking intensity on the mucociliary clearance of active smokers. *Respiration* 2013; 86: 479-485.
298. Wright JL, Churg A. Animal models of COPD: Barriers, successes, and challenges. *Pulm Pharmacol Ther* 2008; 21: 696-698.
299. Ehre C, Worthington EN, Liesman RM, Grubb BR, Barbier D, O'Neal WK, Sallenave JM, Pickles RJ, Boucher RC. Overexpressing mouse model demonstrates the protective role of Muc5ac in the lungs. *Proc Natl Acad Sci U S A* 2012; 109: 16528-16533.
300. Trojanek JB, Cobos-Correa A, Diemer S, Kormann M, Schubert SC, Zhou-Suckow Z, Agrawal R, Duerr J, Wagner CJ, Schatterny J, Hirtz S, Sommerburg O, Hartl D, Schultz C, Mall MA. Airway Mucus Obstruction Triggers Macrophage Activation and MMP12-dependent Emphysema. *Am J Respir Cell Mol Biol* 2014.
301. Hautamaki RD, Kobayashi DK, Senior RM, Shapiro SD. Requirement for macrophage elastase for cigarette smoke-induced emphysema in mice. *Science* 1997; 277: 2002-2004.
302. Wielputz MO, Eichinger M, Zhou Z, Leotta K, Hirtz S, Bartling SH, Semmler W, Kauczor HU, Puderbach M, Mall MA. In vivo monitoring of cystic fibrosis-like lung disease in mice by volumetric computed tomography. *Eur Respir J* 2011; 38: 1060-1070.
303. Churg A, Wright JL. Proteases and emphysema. *Curr Opin Pulm Med* 2005; 11: 153-159.
304. Gehrig S, Duerr J, Weitnauer M, Wagner CJ, Graeber SY, Schatterny J, Hirtz S, Belaaouaj A, Dalpke AH, Schultz C, Mall MA. Lack of neutrophil elastase reduces inflammation, mucus hypersecretion, and emphysema, but not mucus obstruction, in mice with cystic fibrosis-like lung disease. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2014; 189: 1082-1092.
305. McDonough JE, Yuan R, Suzuki M, Seyednejad N, Elliott WM, Sanchez PG, Wright AC, Geftter WB, Litzky L, Coxson HO, Pare PD, Sin DD, Pierce RA, Woods JC, McWilliams AM, Mayo JR, Lam SC, Cooper JD, Hogg JC. Small-airway obstruction and emphysema in chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *N Engl J Med* 2011; 365: 1567-1575.
306. Agusti A, Bel E, Thomas M, Vogelmeier C, Brusselle G, Holgate S, Humbert M, Jones P, Gibson PG, Vestbo J, Beasley R, Pavord ID. Treatable traits: toward precision medicine of chronic airway diseases. *Eur Respir J* 2016; 47: 410-419.
307. Miravittles M, Anzueto A, Legnani D, Forstmeier L, Fargel M. Patient's perception of exacerbations of COPD--the PERCEIVE study. *Respir Med* 2007; 101: 453-460.
308. Garcia-Aymerich J, Farrero E, Felez MA, Izquierdo J, Marrades RM, Anto JM. Risk factors of readmission to hospital for a COPD exacerbation: a prospective study. *Thorax* 2003; 58: 100-105.
309. Soler-Cataluna JJ, Martinez-Garcia MA, Roman Sanchez P, Salcedo E, Navarro M, Ochando R. Severe acute exacerbations and mortality in patients with chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *Thorax* 2005; 60: 925-931.
310. Corhay JL, Vincken W, Schlessen M, Bossuyt P, Imschoot J. Chronic bronchitis in COPD patients is associated with increased risk of exacerbations: a cross-sectional multicentre study. *Int J Clin Pract* 2013; 67: 1294-1301.
311. Terzikhan N, Verhamme KM, Hofman A, Stricker BH, Brusselle GG, Lahousse L. Prevalence and incidence of COPD in smokers and non-smokers: the Rotterdam Study. *Eur J Epidemiol* 2016; 31: 785-792.
312. Celli BR, MacNee W. Standards for the diagnosis and treatment of patients with COPD: a summary of the ATS/ERS position paper. *Eur Respir J* 2004; 23: 932-946.



313. Organization WH. International statistical classification of diseases and health related problems, 10th revision. *Geneva: WHO* 1992.
314. Allinson JP, Hardy R, Donaldson GC, Shaheen SO, Kuh D, Wedzicha JA. The Presence of Chronic Mucus Hypersecretion across Adult Life in Relation to Chronic Obstructive Pulmonary Disease Development. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2016; 193: 662-672.
315. Sethi S, Murphy TF. Infection in the Pathogenesis and Course of Chronic Obstructive Pulmonary Disease. *N Engl J Med* 2008; 359: 2355-2365.
316. Papi A, Luppi F, Franco F, Fabbri LM. Pathophysiology of exacerbations of chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *Proc Am Thorac Soc* 2006; 3: 245-251.
317. Kanner RE, Anthonisen NR, Connett JE. Lower respiratory illnesses promote FEV(1) decline in current smokers but not ex-smokers with mild chronic obstructive pulmonary disease: results from the lung health study. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2001; 164: 358-364.
318. Speizer FE, Fay ME, Dockery DW, Ferris BG, Jr. Chronic obstructive pulmonary disease mortality in six U.S. cities. *Am Rev Respir Dis* 1989; 140: S49-55.
319. Barnes PJ. Sex Differences in Chronic Obstructive Pulmonary Disease Mechanisms. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2016; 193: 813-814.
320. Prescott E, Bjerg AM, Andersen PK, Lange P, Vestbo J. Gender difference in smoking effects on lung function and risk of hospitalization for COPD: results from a Danish longitudinal population study. *Eur Respir J* 1997; 10: 822-827.
321. Celli B, Vestbo J, Jenkins CR, Jones PW, Ferguson GT, Calverley PM, Yates JC, Anderson JA, Willits LR, Wise RA. Sex differences in mortality and clinical expressions of patients with chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. The TORCH experience. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2011; 183: 317-322.
322. Kim V, Zhao H, Boriek AM, Anzueto A, Soler X, Bhatt SP, Rennard SI, Wise R, Comellas A, Ramsdell JW, Kinney GL, Han MK, Martinez CH, Yen A, Black-Shinn J, Porszasz J, Criner GJ, Hanania NA, Sharafkhaneh A, Crapo JD, Make BJ, Silverman EK, Curtis JL. Persistent and Newly Developed Chronic Bronchitis Are Associated with Worse Outcomes in Chronic Obstructive Pulmonary Disease. *Ann Am Thorac Soc* 2016; 13: 1016-1025.
323. Seys LJ, Verhamme FM, Schinwald A, Hammad H, Cunoosamy DM, Bantsimba-Malanda C, Sabirsh A, McCall E, Flavell L, Herbst R, Provoost S, Lambrecht BN, Joos GF, Brusselle GG, Bracke KR. Role of B Cell-Activating Factor in Chronic Obstructive Pulmonary Disease. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2015; 192: 706-718.
324. Zhu X, Gadgil AS, Givelber R, George MP, Stoner MW, Sciruba FC, Duncan SR. Peripheral T cell functions correlate with the severity of chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *J Immunol* 2009; 182: 3270-3277.
325. Sapey E, Wood AM. Auto-antibodies and inflammation. A case of the chicken and the egg? *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2011; 183: 959-960.
326. Rinaldi M, Lehouck A, Heulens N, Lavend'homme R, Carlier V, Saint-Remy JM, Decramer M, Gayan-Ramirez G, Janssens W. Anti-elastin B-cell and T-cell immunity in patients with chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *Thorax* 2012; 67: 694-700.
327. Nunez B, Saulea J, Anto JM, Julia MR, Orozco M, Monso E, Noguera A, Gomez FP, Garcia-Aymerich J, Agusti A. Anti-tissue antibodies are related to lung function in chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2011; 183: 1025-1031.
328. Mackay F, Browning JL. BAFF: A fundamental survival factor for B cells. *Nat Rev Immunol* 2002; 2: 465-475.
329. Seys LJM, Verhamme FM, Cunoosamy DM, Herbst R, Lambrecht BN, Joos GF, Brusselle GG, Bracke KR. Role Of B-Cell Activating Factor (BAFF) In Cigarette-Smoke Induced Lymphoid Follicle Formation And Chronic Obstructive Pulmonary Disease (COPD). American Thoracic Society; 2014. p. A3915-A3915.

330. Van Pottelberge GR, Bracke KR, Demedts IK, De Rijck K, Reinartz SM, van Drunen CM, Verleden GM, Vermassen FE, Joos GF, Brusselle GG. Selective accumulation of langerhans-type dendritic cells in small airways of patients with COPD. *Respir Res* 2010; 11: 35.
331. Vincent FB, Morand EF, Schneider P, Mackay F. The BAFF/APRIL system in SLE pathogenesis. *Nat Rev Rheumatol* 2014; 10: 365-373.
332. Scholz JL, Crowley JE, Tomayko MM, Steinel N, O'Neill PJ, Quinn WJ, 3rd, Goenka R, Miller JP, Cho YH, Long V, Ward C, Migone TS, Shlomchik MJ, Cancro MP. BLyS inhibition eliminates primary B cells but leaves natural and acquired humoral immunity intact. *Proc Natl Acad Sci U S A* 2008; 105: 15517-15522.
333. Sindhava VJ, Scholz JL, Cancro MP. Roles for BLyS family members in meeting the distinct homeostatic demands of innate and adaptive B cells. *Front Immunol* 2013; 4: 37.
334. Navarra SV, Guzman RM, Gallacher AE, Hall S, Levy RA, Jimenez RE, Li EK, Thomas M, Kim HY, Leon MG, Tanasescu C, Nasonov E, Lan JL, Pineda L, Zhong ZJ, Freimuth W, Petri MA. Efficacy and safety of belimumab in patients with active systemic lupus erythematosus: a randomised, placebo-controlled, phase 3 trial. *Lancet* 2011; 377: 721-731.
335. Furie R, Petri M, Zamani O, Cervera R, Wallace DJ, Tegzova D, Sanchez-Guerrero J, Schwarting A, Merrill JT, Chatham WW, Stohl W, Ginzler EM, Hough DR, Zhong ZJ, Freimuth W, van Vollenhoven RF. A phase III, randomized, placebo-controlled study of belimumab, a monoclonal antibody that inhibits B lymphocyte stimulator, in patients with systemic lupus erythematosus. *Arthritis Rheum* 2011; 63: 3918-3930.
336. Moisini I, Davidson A. BAFF: a local and systemic target in autoimmune diseases. *Clin Exp Immunol* 2009; 158: 155-163.
337. Hiemstra PS. Altered macrophage function in chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *Ann Am Thorac Soc* 2013; 10 Suppl: S180-185.
338. Frankenberger M, Menzel M, Betz R, Kassner G, Weber N, Kohlhauf M, Haussinger K, Ziegler-Heitbrock L. Characterization of a population of small macrophages in induced sputum of patients with chronic obstructive pulmonary disease and healthy volunteers. *Clin Exp Immunol* 2004; 138: 507-516.
339. Kunz LI, Lapperre TS, Snoeck-Stroband JB, Budulac SE, Timens W, van Wijngaarden S, Schrumpf JA, Rabe KF, Postma DS, Sterk PJ, Hiemstra PS, Groningen Leiden Universities Corticosteroids in Obstructive Lung Disease Study G. Smoking status and anti-inflammatory macrophages in bronchoalveolar lavage and induced sputum in COPD. *Respir Res* 2011; 12: 34.
340. Davies LC, Jenkins SJ, Allen JE, Taylor PR. Tissue-resident macrophages. *Nat Immunol* 2013; 14: 986-995.
341. Walters S, Webster KE, Sutherland A, Gardam S, Groom J, Liuwantara D, Marino E, Thaxton J, Weinberg A, Mackay F, Brink R, Sprent J, Grey ST. Increased CD4+Foxp3+ T cells in BAFF-transgenic mice suppress T cell effector responses. *J Immunol* 2009; 182: 793-801.
342. Bodas M, Min T, Mazur S, Vij N. Critical modifier role of membrane-cystic fibrosis transmembrane conductance regulator-dependent ceramide signaling in lung injury and emphysema. *J Immunol* 2011; 186: 602-613.
343. Livraghi-Butrico A, Kelly EJ, Klem ER, Dang H, Wolfgang MC, Boucher RC, Randell SH, O'Neal WK. Mucus clearance, MyD88-dependent and MyD88-independent immunity modulate lung susceptibility to spontaneous bacterial infection and inflammation. *Mucosal Immunol* 2012; 5: 397-408.
344. Boucher RC. On the Pathogenesis of Acute Exacerbations of Mucoobstructive Lung Diseases. *Ann Am Thorac Soc* 2015; 12 Suppl 2: S160-163.

345. Shah VS, Ernst S, Tang XX, Karp PH, Parker CP, Ostedgaard LS, Welsh MJ. Relationships among CFTR expression, HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> secretion, and host defense may inform gene- and cell-based cystic fibrosis therapies. *Proc Natl Acad Sci U S A* 2016; 113: 5382-5387.
346. Cantin AM. Cystic Fibrosis Transmembrane Conductance Regulator. Implications in Cystic Fibrosis and Chronic Obstructive Pulmonary Disease. *Ann Am Thorac Soc* 2016; 13 Suppl 2: S150-155.
347. Lange P, Vestbo J. Chronic Mucus Hypersecretion and the Natural History of Chronic Obstructive Pulmonary Disease. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2016; 193: 602-603.
348. Abou Alaiwa MH, Reznikov LR, Gansemer ND, Sheets KA, Horswill AR, Stoltz DA, Zabner J, Welsh MJ. pH modulates the activity and synergism of the airway surface liquid antimicrobials beta-defensin-3 and LL-37. *Proc Natl Acad Sci U S A* 2014; 111: 18703-18708.
349. Kostikas K, Papatheodorou G, Ganas K, Psathakis K, Panagou P, Loukides S. pH in expired breath condensate of patients with inflammatory airway diseases. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2002; 165: 1364-1370.
350. Papaioannou AI, Loukides S, Minas M, Kontogianni K, Bakakos P, Gourgoulisanis KI, Alchanatis M, Papiris S, Kostikas K. Exhaled breath condensate pH as a biomarker of COPD severity in ex-smokers. *Respir Res* 2011; 12: 67.
351. Hsiao HM, Thatcher TH, Colas RA, Serhan CN, Phipps RP, Sime PJ. Resolvin D1 Reduces Emphysema and Chronic Inflammation. *Am J Pathol* 2015; 185: 3189-3201.
352. Britto CJ, Cohn L. Bactericidal/Permeability-increasing protein fold-containing family member A1 in airway host protection and respiratory disease. *Am J Respir Cell Mol Biol* 2015; 52: 525-534.
353. Woodruff PG, Barr RG, Bleecker E, Christenson SA, Couper D, Curtis JL, Gouskova NA, Hansel NN, Hoffman EA, Kanner RE, Kleerup E, Lazarus SC, Martinez FJ, Paine R, 3rd, Rennard S, Tashkin DP, Han MK. Clinical Significance of Symptoms in Smokers with Preserved Pulmonary Function. *N Engl J Med* 2016; 374: 1811-1821.
354. Packard TA, Li QZ, Cosgrove GP, Bowler RP, Cambier JC. COPD is associated with production of autoantibodies to a broad spectrum of self-antigens, correlative with disease phenotype. *Immunol Res* 2013; 55: 48-57.
355. Eustace A, Smyth LJ, Mitchell L, Williamson K, Plumb J, Singh D. Identification of cells expressing IL-17A and IL-17F in the lungs of patients with COPD. *Chest* 2011; 139: 1089-1100.
356. Rayamajhi M, Delgado C, Condon TV, Riches DW, Lenz LL. Lung B cells promote early pathogen dissemination and hasten death from inhalation anthrax. *Mucosal Immunol* 2012; 5: 444-454.
357. Bafadhel M, McKenna S, Terry S, Mistry V, Reid C, Haldar P, McCormick M, Haldar K, Keadze T, Duvoix A, Lindblad K, Patel H, Rugman P, Dodson P, Jenkins M, Saunders M, Newbold P, Green RH, Venge P, Lomas DA, Barer MR, Johnston SL, Pavord ID, Brightling CE. Acute exacerbations of chronic obstructive pulmonary disease: identification of biologic clusters and their biomarkers. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2011; 184: 662-671.
358. Marin A, Monso E, Garcia-Nunez M, Sauleda J, Noguera A, Pons J, Agusti A, Morera J. Variability and effects of bronchial colonisation in patients with moderate COPD. *Eur Respir J* 2010; 35: 295-302.

## CURRICULUM VITAE

**Personal details**

<b>Name</b>	Leen Seys
<b>Home address</b>	Munkelostraat 26 8750 Wingene Belgium
<b>Date of birth</b>	December 11 <sup>th</sup> 1979
<b>Nationality</b>	Belgian
<b>Email</b>	Leenseys@yahoo.com / Leen.Seys@Ugent.be

**Work experience**

<b>2012 – present</b>	PhD candidate in Health Sciences – Department Respiratory Medicine – Faculty of Medical and health sciences – Ghent University Hospital - Belgium
<b>2006 – 2012</b>	Independent equine veterinarian

**Education**

<b>2002-2006</b>	Veterinary medicine – Major in Equine medicine Faculty of Veterinary medicine – Ghent University – Belgium
<b>1997-2002</b>	Master in Biology, Major in Animal Science Faculty of Science – Ghent University – Belgium
<b>1991-1997</b>	Science – Mathematics – Sint-Lodewijkscollege – Brugge – Belgium

**Additional courses**

<b>2016</b>	PhD career focus – Ghent University – Belgium
<b>2015</b>	Translational Biomedical <i>in vivo</i> imaging – Ghent University – Belgium Speed Reading – Ghent University – Belgium
<b>2014</b>	Multicolor flow cytometry course - BD Biosciences – Erembodegem – Belgium
<b>2013</b>	Advanced academic English: writing skills– Ghent University - Belgium Advanced academic English: conference skills– Ghent University – Belgium

- 2012** Laboratory animal science – Ghent University - Belgium  
 Clinical studies: study design, implementation and reporting– Ghent University - Belgium  
 Statistical analysis with SPSS (advanced course) – Ghent University - Belgium

### Awards/grants

- 2016** Facultair opvangmandaat November 2016 – September 2017  
 Travel grant, Faculty Mobility Fund for Keystone Symposium: ‘ B cells at the intersection of innate and adaptive immunity’, Stockholm, Sweden, May 29<sup>th</sup> – June 2<sup>nd</sup> 2016
- 2014** Travel grant, 12<sup>th</sup> Lung Science Conference (ERS): ‘Lung inflammation and immunity’, Estoril, Portugal, March 21<sup>st</sup> – 23<sup>rd</sup> 2014
- 2006** Award for best Master thesis from the Belgian Equine Practitioner Society (BEPS)

### Attended conferences

- 2016** IRC Symposium: “Innate immunity & Lymphoid homeostasis”, Ghent, Belgium September 14, 2016.  
 Keystone symposium: B cells at the intersection of innate and adaptive immunity, Stockholm, Sweden, May 29<sup>th</sup> – June 2<sup>nd</sup> 2016
- 2015** European Congress of Immunology, Vienna, Austria, September 6<sup>th</sup> – 9<sup>th</sup> 2015  
 IUAP meeting AIReWAY II, Leuven, Belgium, June 2015
- 2014** 12<sup>th</sup> Lung Science Conference, Estoril, Portugal, March 21<sup>st</sup> – 23<sup>rd</sup> 2014  
 ATS international Conference, San Diego, USA, May 16<sup>th</sup> – 29<sup>th</sup> 2014  
 IUAP meeting AIReWAY II, Liège, Belgium, June 13<sup>th</sup> 2014
- 2013** IUAP meeting AIReWAY II, Ghent, Belgium, March 8<sup>th</sup> 2013
- 2012** Chronic inflammatory disorders of the lung. Freiburg, Germany, September 28<sup>th</sup> – 29<sup>th</sup> 2012

## Abstracts and presentations

- ◆ **IRC Symposium**, Ghent, Belgium, September 14<sup>th</sup> 2016  
-Absence of polymeric immunoglobulin receptor aggravates cigarette smoke-induced inflammation in mice (poster presentation).
- ◆ **American thoracic society conference**, San Francisco, USA, May 2016  
- Epidemiology of Chronic Bronchitis in Chronic Obstructive Pulmonary Disease (COPD) (Poster presentation)
- ◆ **Belgische Vereniging voor Pneumologie**, GSK awards, Brussel, Belgium, May 6<sup>th</sup> 2015  
Role of B cell-activating factor in COPD (Oral presentation)
- ◆ **American thoracic society conference**, San Diego, USA, May 16<sup>th</sup> – 21<sup>st</sup> 2014  
- The role of B cell activating factor in cigarette smoke-induced follicle formation and COPD (Oral presentation)  
- Cigarette smoke exposure of transgenic  $\beta$ -ENaC overexpressing mice as a model for COPD (Poster session)
- ◆ **12<sup>th</sup> Lung Science Conference ‘Lung inflammation and immunity’**, Estoril, Portugal, March 21<sup>st</sup> – 23<sup>rd</sup> 2014  
Antagonizing B cell activating factor (BAFF) prevents formation of lymphoid follicles in cigarette smoke-exposed mice (Oral presentation)
- ◆ **IUAP meeting AIREWAY II**, Liège, Belgium, June 13<sup>th</sup> 2014  
The role of B cell activating factor in cigarette smoke-induced follicle formation and COPD (Oral presentation)
- ◆ **Belgische Vereniging voor Pneumologie**, GSK awards, Brussel, Belgium, June 11<sup>th</sup> 2014  
Cigarette smoke-exposure of transgenic  $\beta$ -ENaC overexpressing mice - A model for COPD (Oral presentation)

## Peer-reviewed publications

- ◆ Bracke KR, Verhamme FM, **Seys LJ**, Bantsimba-Malanda C, Cunoosamy DM, Herbst R, Hammad H, Lambrecht BN, Joos GF, Brusselle GG. Role of CXCL13 in cigarette smoke-induced lymphoid follicle formation and chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2013; 188: 343-355.  
IF: 11.986, ranking Respiratory System: 1/54
- ◆ **Seys LJ**, Verhamme FM, Schinwald A, Hammad H, Cunoosamy DM, Bantsimba-Malanda C, Sabirsh A, McCall E, Flavell L, Herbst R, Provoost S, Lambrecht BN, Joos GF, Brusselle GG, Bracke KR. Role of B Cell-Activating Factor in Chronic Obstructive Pulmonary Disease. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med* 2015; 192: 706-718.  
IF: 13.118 / Ranking in Respiratory System: 2/58

- ◆ **Seys LJ**, Verhamme FM, Dupont LL, Desauter E, Duerr J, Seyhan Agircan A, Conickx G, Joos GF, Brusselle GG, Mall MA, Bracke KR. Airway Surface Dehydration Aggravates Cigarette Smoke-Induced Hallmarks of COPD in Mice. *PloS one* 2015; 10: e0129897.  
IF: 3.057 / Ranking in Multidisciplinary sciences: 11/63
- ◆ De Grove KC, Provoost S, Hendriks RW, McKenzie ANJ, **Seys LJM**, Kumar S, Maes T, Brusselle GG, Joos GF. Dysregulation of type 2 innate lymphoid cells and Th2 cells impairs pollutant-induced allergic airway responses. *Journal of Allergy and Clinical Immunology*. 2016. [Epub ahead of print]  
IF: 12.485, Ranking Allergy: 1/25
- ◆ Conickx G, Mestdagh P, Avila Cobos F, Verhamme FM, Maes T, Vanaudenaerde BM, **Seys LJ**, Lahousse L, Kim RY, Hsu AC, Wark PA, Hansbro PM, Joos GF, Vandesompele J, Bracke KR, Brusselle GG. MicroRNA profiling reveals a role for microRNA-218-5p in the pathogenesis of chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. *Am J Respir Crit Care Med*, 2016; Jul 13. [Epub ahead of print]  
IF: 13.118 / Ranking in Respiratory System: 2/58
- ◆ Polverino F\*, **Seys LJ\***, Bracke KR, Owen CA. B Cells in Chronic Obstructive Pulmonary Disease: Moving to Center Stage. *Am J Physiol Lung Cell Mol Physiol* 2016; 311: L687-L695. (\* equal contribution)  
IF: 4.721/ Ranking in Respiratory System: 8/58

## DANKWOORD

Nu het einde van dit doctoraat is aangebroken, zou ik graag enkele mensen willen bedanken zonder wie dit doctoraat niet mogelijk was geweest.

Eerst en vooral mijn promotor, Prof. Dr. Guy Brusselle: hartelijk dank voor de kans die u me heeft gegeven, uw aanstekelijk enthousiasme voor wetenschappelijk onderzoek en uw fantastische begeleiding.

Ken, Prof. Dr. Bracke, omdat ik weet dat je niet van al te uitgebreide lofbetuigingen houdt, heb ik de oorspronkelijke 4 pagina's dank ingekort tot het volgende: bedankt voor de dagdagelijkse begeleiding, praktische hulp en leuke samenwerking. Ik heb ontzettend veel van je geleerd! Heel veel nuttige zaken maar ook een hele reeks iets te flauwe mopjes waardoor ik je zeker nooit zal vergeten ;)

Graag dank ik ook de leden van mijn examencommissie: Prof. Dr. Johan Van De Voorde, Prof. Dr. Wim Janssens, Prof. Dr. Tom Coenye, Prof. Dr. Dirk Elewaut, Prof. Dr. Karim Vermaelen en Prof. Dr. Bart Lambrecht. Hartelijk dank voor het lezen van dit proefschrift, de suggesties en vragen die dit werk zeker hebben geholpen. Dr. Ali Önder Yildirim, thank you for your suggestions and comments which have definitely added to this work. Also many thanks for taking the time to be present at the public defense.

Prof. Dr. Guy Joos, u zorgt er als diensthoofd voor dat er aandacht is en mogelijkheden zijn voor wetenschappelijk onderzoek binnen de dienst; hartelijk dank hiervoor!

De afgelopen 4 jaar was ik omringd door een topteam! Dit topteam heeft mij van alles geleerd, mij zonder enige aarzeling hulp en steun gegeven bij de praktische uitvoering van dit doctoraat, gezorgd voor een leuke sfeer om in te werken, gezorgd voor aangename pauzes en op regelmatige basis tranen in mijn ogen van het lachen. Jullie aanhoorden al mijn verhalen en leefden met me mee,... Ann, Greet, Indra, Katleen, Anouck, Fien, Katrien, Griet, Elise, Tania, Sharen en Evy ongelooflijk bedankt! Er zijn de afgelopen 4 jaar ook een aantal mensen andere horizons gaan opzoeken: Eliane, Marie-Rose, Lien, Evelyn, Ellen, Lisa en Smitha: ook aan jullie een dikke merci! Ellen, ook heel erg bedankt om me te voorzien van epitheelcellen, macrofagen, neutrofielen,... Ik hoop dat je de figuren die ik ermee gemaakt heb een beetje goed vindt...

Ook de collega's uit 7K12 - Lies, Lotte, Kevin, Bibi, Annie, Bart en Chantal - heel erg bedankt voor de leuke samenwerking, de babbels en het oplossen van alle administratie!

Daarnaast wil ik zeker ook de collega's van TIL en de collega's van het animalarium bedanken voor de aangename samenwerking en leuke babbels!

Ik ben gezegend met fantastische familie en vrienden: allemaal ongelooflijk bedankt voor de vriendschap! Mama en papa, een speciale dank je wel aan jullie voor jullie continue steun, hulp en vooral liefde! Paul en Ester, jullie verdienen ook een extra merci om steeds klaar te staan voor ons en voor de jongens!



Tot slot, dank je wel Bjorn, mijn lief, mijn partner, mijn man, mijn vriend, om alles met me mee te beleven. Andreas, Samuel en Thomas, dit weten jullie al, maar ik schrijf het toch nog even neer: jullie zijn mijn beste vriendjes, mijn grootste bengeltjes, mijn liefste engeltjes en voor Bjorn en ik het allerbelangrijkste op de hele werldebol!

Leen